



**DELHI UNIVERSITY  
LIBRARY**

**DELHI UNIVERSITY LIBRARY**

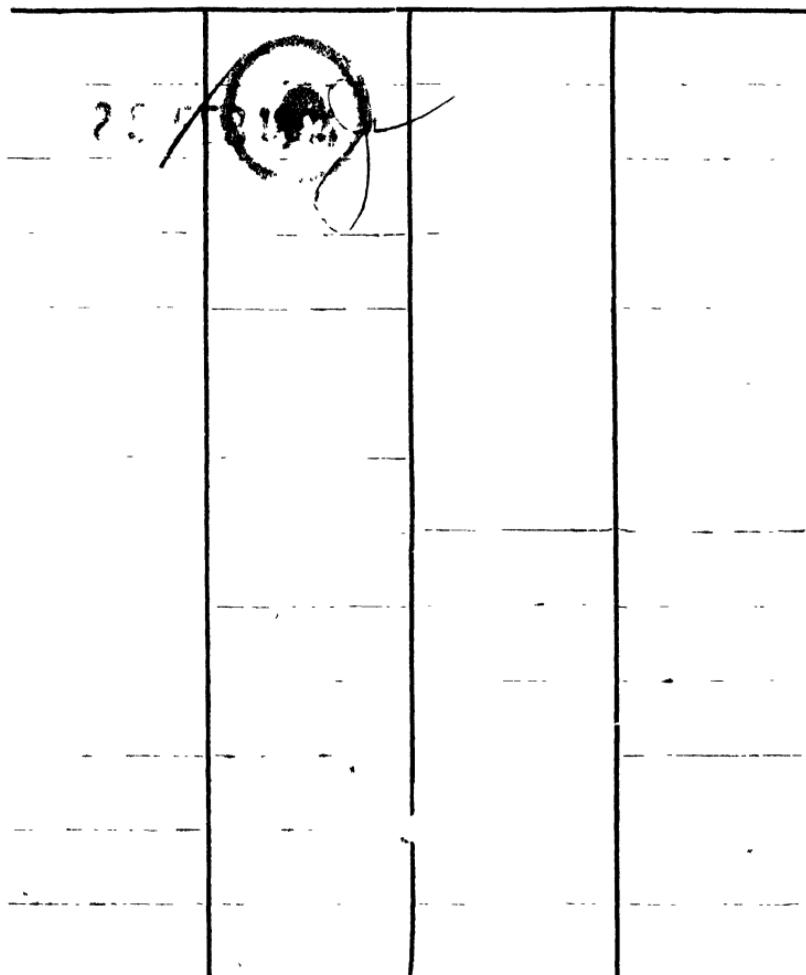
Cl. No. N8461371 63

Ac. No. 715243

**Date of release for loan**

30 SEP 1953

This book should be returned on or before the date last stamped below. An overdue charge of one anna will be charged for each day the book is kept overtime.





## **T**racts on *Listening to Music*



ORIENTAL TRANSLATION FUND  
NEW SERIES,  
VOL. XXXIV.

# TRACTS ON LISTENING TO MUSIC

Being  
*Dhamm al-malāhī* by Ibn abī 'l-Dunyā and  
*Bawāriq al-ilmā'* by Majd al-Dīn al-Ṭūsī al-Ghazālī

Edited, with  
Introduction, Translation, and Notes  
BY  
JAMES ROBSON, M.A.,  
*Lecturer in Arabic, the University of Glasgow*

PRINTED AND PUBLISHED UNDER THE PATRONAGE OF  
THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY  
AND SOLD AT  
74 GROSVENOR STREET, LONDON, W.1  
1938

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN BY STEPHEN AUSTIN & SONS, LTD., HERTFORD.

## CONTENTS

	<small>PAGE</small>
<b>PREFACE</b>	vii
<b>INTRODUCTION</b>	1
<b>IBN ABĪ 'L-DUNYĀ</b>	14
<b>DHAMM AL-MALĀHĪ : THE MS.</b>	17
<b>DHAMM AL-MALĀHĪ : TRANSLATION</b>	19
<b>DHAMM AL-MALĀHĪ : TEXT</b>	41
<b>MAJD AL-DĪN</b>	63
<b>BAWĀRIQ AL-ILMĀ' : MANUSCRIPTS</b>	65
<b>BAWĀRIQ AL-ILMĀ' : TRANSLATION</b>	69
<b>BAWĀRIQ AL-ILMĀ' : TEXT</b>	119
<b>BIBLIOGRAPHY OF BOOKS CONSULTED</b>	185
<b>INDEX :</b>	
1. Citations from the Qur'ān	189
2. Names of Persons and Places	190



## PREFACE

The present volume presents two Arabic works which, though vastly different in style and outlook, deal with the same general subject. One roundly condemns music and the other approves of it.

In dealing with Ibn abī 'l-Dunyā's work, I have made use of only the Berlin manuscript, although three manuscripts of which I have knowledge are mentioned on page 17. My friend, Mr. A. S. Fulton, very kindly made inquiries for me about the Damascus manuscript while on a visit to that city, but discovered that it was out on loan and so was not available. The existence of the Istanbul copy came to my knowledge only when Brockelmann's Supplementband referring to it was published, and by that time the copy was in the printer's hands.

After the copy had all been set up, Brockelmann's Supplementband (i, 756) containing references to the works of Majd al-Dīn was published, and I was surprised to find that *Bawāriq al-ilmā'* is there stated to have been published in Lucknow in 1317 A.H. along with Ibn Zaghdūn's *Farāḥ al-asmā'*. I immediately made inquiries about this book, but have been unable to obtain a copy. From the description, it seems probable that Majd al-Dīn's work appears in the margin, and therefore does not make the present text superfluous.

My grateful thanks are due to Dr. Henry G. Farmer, who drew my attention to the two works contained in this volume, and very kindly lent me rotograph copies of the two Berlin

manuscripts. To Professor R. A. Nicholson, whom I consulted regarding the poetical passages, I am greatly indebted. I wrote to him as a complete stranger, and was charmed by the cordiality of his reply and the readiness with which he threw light on my difficulties.

Finally, I owe a deep debt of gratitude to the Council of the Royal Asiatic Society for making it possible for me to have this book published.

J. R.

GLASGOW.

*November, 1937.*

## I

## INTRODUCTION

THE question of the lawfulness of listening to music has been the subject of long controversy among Muslims, a controversy, it would seem, which can never be settled. Very naturally both parties apply to the Qur'ān and Tradition to support their views, as these are fundamental bases of Islām.

Al-Nuwairī (d. 732/1332) has made a collection of verses from the Qur'ān quoted by opponents of audition (*samā'*).<sup>1</sup> They are: xxiii, 1-3, "The believers who are humble in their prayers and who turn aside from vain talk are prosperous"; xxv, 72, "And those who do not bear false witness, and when they pass idle talk, pass honourably"; xxviii, 55, "And when they hear vain talk, they turn away from it"; xxxi, 5, "And among men are those who buy sportive talk to lead astray from Allāh's path without knowledge, and make a mock of it. Those will have a shameful punishment"; xvii, 66 (spoken by Allāh to Iblis), "And excite those of them whom you can with your voice"; liii, 59-61, "Do you wonder at this talk? And do you laugh and not weep, while you are amusing yourselves (*sāmidūna*)?" Ibn 'Abbās and Mujāhid are quoted as saying that *sāmidūna* means that they were singing.

Al-Qushairī (d. 465/1072) quotes some verses to uphold the lawfulness of music. They are: xxxix, 19, "Give glad tidings to my servants who listen to the word and follow the best of it"; xxx, 14, "And they in a garden shall be glad" (*yahbirūna*, which is interpreted as meaning that they will listen);<sup>2</sup> xxxv, 1, "He adds in the creation what He pleases." This is interpreted as referring to the beautiful

<sup>1</sup> *Nihāyat al-arab*, iv, 133.

<sup>2</sup> *Risāla*, p. 178.

voice. Reference is also made to *xxxi*, 18, "The most disagreeable of voices is the voice of asses,"<sup>1</sup> the argument evidently being that dislike of one type of sound involves liking for others.<sup>2</sup>

These verses are very indefinite, so those who would support their views by reference to the Qur'ān are forced to give a special interpretation to the verses they quote.

When they turn to Tradition they have more scope, for it contains material which supports both parties. For example, opponents of music can quote 'Ā'isha<sup>3</sup> as saying that the Prophet prohibited singing-girls,<sup>4</sup> while the other party can quote traditions which tell how Muḥammad listened to two singing-girls in 'Ā'isha's house.<sup>5</sup> Those who oppose music are generally content to make their quotations and ignore the other party's arguments, while those who favour it take up the arguments used against them and criticize the validity<sup>6</sup> or interpretation<sup>7</sup> of the traditions quoted against music.

The opponents of music receive valuable support from the schools of canon law. They say that the four Sunnī *imāms* disapproved of music,<sup>8</sup> but stories are told which suggest that Abū Ḥanīfa,<sup>9</sup> Mālik,<sup>10</sup> and Al-Shāfi'i<sup>11</sup> appreciated it. The doctors who elaborated the laws of the schools, however, generally pronounce against it. For example, the *Hidāya*, a Ḥanafī law book, says that professional wailing-women and singing-women, people who sing to the accompaniment of the pandore (*tanbūr*), or sing in public, are persons whose

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 180.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Abū Naṣr al-Sarrāj, *Kitāb al-Luma'*, 273 f.

<sup>3</sup> Muḥammad's favourite wife.

<sup>4</sup> Quoted by Al-Ghazālī, *JRAS.* (1901), p. 244. Ibn abī 'l-Dunyā gives it on the authority of Abū Umāma (see p. 23).

<sup>5</sup> Al-Bukhārī, *Idain*, 2.

<sup>6</sup> Al-Nuwairī, op. cit., pp. 149 ff.

<sup>7</sup> *JRAS.* (1901), pp. 244 ff.

<sup>8</sup> Al-Nuwairī, op. cit., pp. 134 f.; *JRAS.* (1901), 201, 202, 204.

<sup>9</sup> *Iqd*, iv, 96.

<sup>10</sup> Al-Qughairī, *Risāla*, 179; *Aghānī*, iv, 39; *Iqd*, iv, 93; *Al-Luma'*, 276.

<sup>11</sup> Al-Qughairī, *Risāla*, 180.

testimony is not accepted.<sup>1</sup> Al-Nawawī (d. 676/1277), a Shāfi'i doctor, prohibits instruments which excite the hearers to partake of forbidden drinks. He allows a tambourine (*duff*) at a wedding, a circumcision, or on festive occasions, but says that the *kūba*<sup>2</sup> must never be played. He allows the song of the camel drivers, but prohibits every other kind of unaccompanied singing.<sup>3</sup> He also holds that it is lawful to break instruments of music without incurring any liability.<sup>4</sup> Shī'a law is also strict. Even chanting the Qur'ān to excite pleasure places one among those whose testimony is not accepted. The tambourine is tolerated at a wedding or circumcision, but even this is blameworthy.<sup>5</sup> No profit must be made from singing, or bewailing the dead.<sup>6</sup>

An interesting aspect of the controversy is that both parties can apply to dreams in which the Prophet appeared. Tradition says, "He who sees me (i.e. Muḥammad) in a dream has seen me, for the devil does not take my form; and a believer's vision is a forty-sixth part of prophecy."<sup>7</sup> It is therefore natural that people should believe in such dreams, but it is rather perplexing to find that they contradict one another. Mimshād al-Dīnawarī (d. 299/912) was told by Muḥammad in a dream that he did not at all disapprove of listening to music.<sup>8</sup> On the other hand, Al-Qushairī tells of some unnamed person who heard Muḥammad in a dream saying, "The mistake is greatest in this," the reference being to audition.<sup>9</sup>

The real source of the dispute is obviously the fact that

<sup>1</sup> *Hidāyah* (Calcutta), iii, 376.

<sup>2</sup> A drum narrow at the middle and wide at the ends. It was forbidden because it was used by the *mukhannathūn* who had a bad reputation. Cf. *JRAS.* (1901), 213, 237.

<sup>3</sup> *Minhāj*, p. 515.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 200. Cf. *Al-Fakhrī*, p. 115, where there is a story of the Caliph Al-Mansūr breaking a pandore (*fanbūr*).

<sup>5</sup> Querry, *Droit Musulman*, ii, 455.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, i, 359.

<sup>7</sup> *Al-Bukhārī*, *Ta'bīr al-ru'ya*, 10.

<sup>8</sup> *Al-Nābulusī*, *Idāb al-dalālāt*, p. 67.

<sup>9</sup> *Risāla*, p. 186.

music very often had evil associations, such as wine drinking, immorality, and neglect of religious duties ; therefore many declared it unlawful. Their reasons must be respected, as they were serious men who deplored the influences which led the young astray. Their attitude was that of puritans in all ages, who feel that worldly pleasure must have no place in life. The other party also included men who recognized the dangers of music and were careful to point out that a general declaration of its lawfulness cannot be made. But they had the insight to recognize that the evil associations were not an essential part of music, and therefore they permitted it to those who could enjoy it without wrongdoing.<sup>1</sup>

The mystics have a special interest in music, looking on it more as a spiritual exercise than an art. It has a powerful influence which may be used for spiritual purposes. It is said that " the temperaments of all living creatures are composed of sounds and melodies blended and harmonized ".<sup>2</sup> Al-Hujwīrī (d. c. 465/1072) tells of an instrument which he calls *angalyūn*, used by Greek doctors in hospitals to cure the sick ; but it is said that if a patient were forced to listen to it too long, it would kill him. The doctors, however, are not so affected, " because it is consonant with their

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Kashf al-mahjūb*, p. 402 ; *JRAS.* (1901), pp. 212 ff. ; Al-Nābulusī, op. cit., pp. 42, 75, 80 ff. I am indebted to Dr. Henry G. Farmer for a reference to the Rev. J. W. Matmeeken's *History of the Scottish Metrical Psalms*, pp. 98 ff., where an extract is given from Calvin's introduction to the Genevan Psalter of 1543. He says (p. 99), " But amongst other things which are suitable for the recreation of men, and for yielding them pleasure, music is either the first, or one of the chief, and we must esteem it a gift of God bestowed for that end. Therefore, by so much the more, we ought to see that it is not abused, for fear of soiling and contaminating it ; turning that to our condemnation which was given for our profit and good. Even were there no other consideration than this alone, it ought to move us to regulate the use of music, so as to make it subservient to all good morals, and that it should not give occasion for loosing the bridle of dissoluteness, that it should not lead to voluptuousness, nor be the instrument of immodesty and impurity." This is essentially the same argument as that used by Al-*Ghazālī* and other Muslims, who hold that music is lawful.

<sup>2</sup> *Kashf al-mahjūb*, 399.

temperaments.”<sup>1</sup> This overwhelming power of music is represented in many tales of people fainting or dying on hearing a song.<sup>2</sup> Al-Ghazālī (d. 505/1111), speaking of the value of music, says that a philosopher declared, “There is in the heart a glorious excellency; the force of speech is not able to elicit it with words, but the soul can do it with melodies.”<sup>3</sup> Abū Sulaimān al-Dārānī (d. 215/830) said, “The beautiful voice does not introduce anything into the heart; it simply stirs in the heart what is in it.”<sup>4</sup>

This natural tendency to be stirred by music makes it necessary for one to be careful, because music may have an evil origin. Al-Hujwīrī tells how Abū'l-Hārith Bunānī was one night charmed by audition; but when the shaikh informed him in the morning that he was Iblīs and that the company was composed of his children, explaining that he did this to bewail his separation from God and to lead holy men astray, Bunānī resolved to have nothing more to do with audition.<sup>5</sup> That charming music may have a diabolic origin is also indicated in a story of Ibrāhīm al-Mausilī (d. 188/804), who declared that three songs with which he delighted Hārūn al-Rashīd on one occasion had been taught him by Iblīs.<sup>6</sup> Al-Hujwīrī tells how Al-Ashqānī once saw naked demons dancing among the members of a party assembled for audition.<sup>7</sup> Abū Tālib al-Makkī (d. 386/996) tells of a shaikh who saw Al-Khadir<sup>8</sup> and asked him what he had to say about audition. He replied, “It is the slippery stone on which only the feet of the learned stand fast.”<sup>9</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*, 407.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. ‘Iqd, iv, 125 ff.; Al-Qushairī, *Risāla*, 184; *Kashf al-mahjūb*, 396, 409 f.; *Al-Luma'*, 285 ff., 289; *JRAS.* (1901), 735 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, 721.

<sup>4</sup> Al-Qushairī, *Risāla*, 185.

<sup>5</sup> *Kashf al-mahjūb*, 411 f.

<sup>6</sup> *Aghānī*, v, 36 ff.

<sup>7</sup> *Kashf*, 412.

<sup>8</sup> A legendary figure mentioned in Qur. xviii, 59 ff. See *Enc. of Islam*, ii, 861 ff.

<sup>9</sup> *Qūt al-qulūb*, iii, 90.

Thus very definite advice is given regarding those who should practise audition. Al-Makki says that if any carnal passion is stirred, audition is forbidden ; if one listens to one's wife or slave girl it is doubtful, as this may be mere amusement ; but if one seeks spiritual enlightenment it is lawful.<sup>1</sup> Abū 'Ali al-Daqqāq (d. 406/1015) said, "Audition is forbidden to the commonalty on account of carnal desire remaining in them, allowable to the ascetics for the attainment of what they strive after, approved for the mystics for the life of their hearts."<sup>2</sup> There is fairly general agreement that audition is dangerous for novices. Al-Junaid (d. 297/910) said, "When you see a novice fond of audition, know that there is a remnant of idleness in him."<sup>3</sup> The suggestion is that he is trying to attain the highest grade of illumination without taking the trouble to fight against carnal desires and rise through the various stations through which the mystic should pass. Al-Hujwīrī feels that there is a moral danger in their presence at audition, as women often look on, and young reprobates may join the company.<sup>4</sup> Elsewhere he says there is a danger of "having their passions violently roused and their virtue corrupted".<sup>5</sup> Abū Naṣr al-Sarrāj (d. 378/988) allows a novice to listen, provided he is directed by a *shaikh*. He is thus kept from mere amusement, and is preserved from the danger of holding erroneous religious ideas.<sup>6</sup> Al-Makki quotes without comment a statement that audition is good only for a gnostic who is firmly established, but not for a novice.<sup>7</sup> Al-Ghazālī, on the other hand, does not forbid novices to take part in audition, but he issues a warning. He says they cannot understand as much as an advanced mystic, and therefore should apply what they hear only to the states they have reached.<sup>8</sup> Elsewhere he speaks of audition as helpful to them, as it causes

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*, loc. cit.

<sup>2</sup> Al-Qushārī, *Risāla*, 181.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, 183.

<sup>4</sup> *Kashf*, 420.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, 412.

<sup>6</sup> *Al-Luma'*, 288.

<sup>7</sup> *Qut*, iii, 91.

<sup>8</sup> *JRAS.* (1901), 709.

them to think seriously of their religious duties.<sup>1</sup> He emphasizes the necessity of having true knowledge to reap the benefit of audition. Those who have not sufficient knowledge of Allāh and His attributes are liable to apply what they hear both to what is allowable and what is not allowable, in which event the harm is greater than the benefit.<sup>2</sup> Al-Hujwīrī speaks similarly. He says, "You must know that each Sūfī has a particular grade in audition and that the feelings which he gains therefrom are proportionate to his grade."<sup>3</sup> Abū 'Alī al-Daqqāq says that he who engages in audition must have knowledge of Islām and Allāh's attributes, otherwise he will fall into infidelity.<sup>4</sup> Abū 'Uthmān al-Hīrī says novices in audition are liable to claim noble states which are not theirs.<sup>5</sup> In this he agrees with Al-Sarrāj.<sup>6</sup> Al-Ghazālī states clearly that "the understanding of what is heard varies with the states of the listener".<sup>7</sup>

The dangers connected with audition have made some feel that it is better left alone. Al-Sarrāj mentions objections to it on the ground that it brings one into association with frivolous people, that it gives no provision for the grave, and that it is not a means of salvation.<sup>8</sup> Al-Hujwīrī says it should not be made a habit.<sup>9</sup> There was also a feeling that it was a practice which ought to be outgrown. Al-Kalābādī (d. 385/995) says that those mystics who enjoy direct experience of Allāh require no such help.<sup>10</sup> This may be related to Al-Hujwīrī's saying that hearing is mediate and immediate. When a reciter is the source of audition, it denotes absence,

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*, 706. Majd al-Din permits novices to take part in audition. Cf. p. 97.

<sup>2</sup> *JRAS.* (1902), p. 3.

<sup>3</sup> *Kashf*, 406.

<sup>4</sup> Al-Qughairī, *Risāla*, 181.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, 182.

<sup>6</sup> *Al-Luma'*, 277.

<sup>7</sup> *JRAS.* (1901), 712.

<sup>8</sup> *Al-Luma'*, 299 f.

<sup>9</sup> *Kashf*, 171, 418 f.; cf. *Futūhāt*, ii, 366 ff.

<sup>10</sup> *Ta'arruf* (Arberry), 166. Cf. *Al-Luma'*, 300.

but when the audition comes from the Beloved Himself, it denotes presence.<sup>1</sup> Mimshād al-Dīnawarī said that if all the musical instruments in the world were united in his ear, they would neither distract him nor do him any good.<sup>2</sup> Al-Hujwīrī's shaikh said, "Audition is the viaticum of the indigent: one who has reached his journey's end hath no need of it."<sup>3</sup> Elsewhere we are told that some avoid audition so as not to lead others astray, others because they fear injury to themselves, and others because they consider it child's play.<sup>4</sup> Al-Ghazālī also says that some advance to a stage in which they do not need audition.<sup>5</sup>

But while much is said against audition, there is much to be said for it. Al-Sarrāj quotes with approval a saying that he who does not love good audition has a defect.<sup>6</sup> Al-Hujwīrī says that it is hearing which makes religion obligatory, and so he decides that it has a high place.<sup>7</sup> Al-Qushairī holds that audition leads one to have a keen desire to please Allāh.<sup>8</sup> Al-Kalābādī says music is the food of the spirit, and when the spirit receives its food it turns aside from the government of the body.<sup>9</sup> Al-Ghazālī quotes words to the effect that audition has a strengthening, cleansing, and directive value.<sup>10</sup> Al-Makkī speaks approvingly of those who have their desire for Allāh quickened, their faith strengthened, and their insight into eternal verities illuminated by audition.<sup>11</sup> Dhū'l-Nūn (d. 245/860) said that "audition is a divine influence which stirs the heart to seek God; those who listen to it spiritually attain unto God, and those who listen to it sensually fall into heresy".<sup>12</sup> Al-Junaid said, "Mercy descends on the poor men in audition, for they hear only from truth and speak only from ecstasy."<sup>13</sup> Al-Ghazālī says that audition

<sup>1</sup> *Kashf*, 405.

<sup>2</sup> Al-Qushairī, *Risāla*, 185.

<sup>3</sup> *Kashf*, 405.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, 412 f.

<sup>5</sup> *JRAS.* (1902), 7 f.

<sup>6</sup> *Al-Luma'*, 272.

<sup>7</sup> *Kashf*, 393.

<sup>8</sup> *Risāla*, 179.

<sup>9</sup> *Op. cit.*, 167.

<sup>10</sup> *JRAS.* (1901), 721.

<sup>11</sup> *Qāt*, iii, 91.

<sup>12</sup> *Kashf*, 404. Cf. *Risāla*, 181.

<sup>13</sup> *Ibid.*, loc. cit.; cf. *Qāt*, iii, 90; *Ta'arruf*, 167.

reveals things which before were unrevealed. It does this by admonition and by purifying and strengthening the heart.<sup>1</sup> Ibn al-Fārid (d. 632/1235) says that audition causes the soul to remember its true nature and strive to free itself from the trammels of the flesh.<sup>2</sup>

The purpose of audition is commonly considered to be the attainment of ecstasy. This may sometimes assume rather a childish aspect, such as that described by Ibn Battūṭa (d. 779/1377), where he speaks of the *darwishes* of the *tarīqa* of Ahmad al-Rifa'i kindling a fire, then dancing and rolling over it and eating the burning fuel<sup>3</sup>; or some of the practices described by Lane in his *Modern Egyptians*.<sup>4</sup> But earlier writers deal with the subject in a serious manner. Al-Kalābādhī speaks of commotion and movement as being a natural outcome of audition.<sup>5</sup> Ecstasy may take different forms. Nicholson speaks of Abū Sa'īd (d. 440/1049) and other *darwishes* circumambulating a tomb, shrieking ecstatically.<sup>6</sup> On another occasion Abū Sa'īd and his companions fell into transports of ecstasy, and when the call to prayer was made, they refused to respond, insisting that they were actually engaged in prayer.<sup>7</sup> We are told that Al-Hallāj (d. 309/922) danced when ecstasy came upon him.<sup>8</sup> But the excitement of ecstasy was not always looked on with approval. Al-Hujwīrī suggests that genuine ecstasy is quiescent. He says that beginners are excited because their bodies are opposed to the divine influence, but that after becoming accustomed to it by practice they can receive it quietly.<sup>9</sup> Elsewhere, however, he suggests the twofold aspect of ecstasy, when he says that it either agitates because of ardent longing, or calms by contemplation.<sup>10</sup> A story is told of Al-Junaid becoming

<sup>1</sup> *JRAS.* (1901), 723.

<sup>2</sup> Nicholson, *Studies*, 236.

<sup>3</sup> *Voyages*, ii, 4 f.

<sup>4</sup> pp. 410 ff.

<sup>5</sup> *Ta'arruf*, 167.

<sup>6</sup> *Studies*, 25.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, 60 f.

<sup>8</sup> *Passion*, 796.

<sup>9</sup> *Kashf*, 408.

<sup>10</sup> *Ibid.*, 414. Cf. *Al-Luma'*, 308, where it is said that ecstasy may produce either quiescence or movement. Neither effect can be said to be superior, as it depends on the cause.

exasperated with a youth who was given to shouting when he was stirred, and telling him that they would have to part company if it happened again.<sup>1</sup> But whether ecstasy manifested itself by commotion or quiescence, it was looked on as the purpose of audition ; and therefore, while some say that one must wait till it comes as an overpowering influence, there are others who say that it may be induced. Al-Ghazālī says that everything must be learned by effort, and that this applies to ecstasy.<sup>2</sup> Provided one is sincere, what at first comes by effort will later become natural. In this he agrees with Al-Hujwīrī.<sup>3</sup>

There are different opinions regarding the most suitable medium for audition. Some hold that recitation of the Qur'ān is most effective. Al-Hujwīrī says it is most beneficial to the mind and most delightful to the ear ; one never grows weary of it.<sup>4</sup> Al-Makkī says listening to the Qur'ān is lawful, listening to singing unlawful, listening to odes of a religious nature doubtful.<sup>5</sup> But others found poetry more effective. Yūsuf ibn al-Husain al-Rāzī was once deeply stirred on hearing a verse of poetry, and it disturbed him to think that he had been reading the Qur'ān for hours without any such emotion.<sup>6</sup> Al-Sarrāj expresses the novel view that the preference for poetry set to music really shows respect for the Qur'ān, as it is of divine origin, and therefore cannot be adorned by music, which is of human origin.<sup>7</sup> Al-Ghazālī deals with the matter at length, giving reasons why poetry may be more effective than the Qur'ān. Among them he says that the very familiarity of the words of the Qur'ān may make them lose their force, whereas some unfamiliar verse of poetry may stir the heart.<sup>8</sup> The value of poetry was recognized, and in assemblies for audition both the Qur'ān and poetry have commonly been used.

<sup>1</sup> *Risāla*, 184.

<sup>2</sup> *JRAS.* (1901), 730 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Kashf*, 415 f.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, 394.

<sup>5</sup> *Qāt*, i, 118.

<sup>6</sup> *Risāla*, 184 ; *Al-Luma'*, 291 f.

<sup>7</sup> *Al-Luma'*, 283 f.

<sup>8</sup> *JRAS.* (1901), 738 ff.

Al-Junaid said that audition must have the time, the place, and the brethren.<sup>1</sup> By these words he meant that the advantages of audition are attained in favourable circumstances and among like-minded people. When people assemble there should be a *shaikh* to direct the proceedings.<sup>2</sup> This is meant to ensure that everything is done decently and in order. When the brethren gather, they must concentrate on the matter in hand, neither paying attention to what happens to other members of the company nor wondering what others are thinking of them.<sup>3</sup> They must be careful not to disturb anyone, or to think of the externals of the occasion. Thus it is wrong for anyone to compliment the singer on the high quality of his singing, or to criticize him if it seems poor.<sup>4</sup> One must think only of Allāh, for He is the one whom they seek in their audition.

It is thus seen that the mystics have taken an intermediate position between men like Ibn abī'l-Dunyā who condemn music root and branch, and those who practise it as an art. They are not interested in it for its own sake and are inclined to condemn it when employed for mere sensual enjoyment. But they contest ardently with those who declare all music unlawful, for they recognize that it has a power to stir the heart which, if rightly directed, may lead to great spiritual exaltation.<sup>5</sup>

Ibn abī'l-Dunyā, as is seen from his tract on instruments of diversion, is not content with condemning music; he condemns various games and pleasures. He is on sure ground in his condemnation of gambling, as in this he follows Qur'ānic teaching.<sup>6</sup> He has also good authority for his denunciation

<sup>1</sup> *Risāla*, 181.

<sup>2</sup> *Kashf*, 419.

<sup>3</sup> *JRAS.* (1902), 3 f.

<sup>4</sup> *Kashf*, 419.

<sup>5</sup> For further information on the general subject of audition, see *Enc. of Islam*, iv, 120 f.; Farmer, *History*, 22 ff.; *JRAS.* (1933), 867 ff. (1935), 340; Nicholson, *The Mystics of Islam*, 63 ff.

<sup>6</sup> Qur. ii, 216; v, 92 f.

of backgammon (*nard*),<sup>1</sup> a game which is generally prohibited, because it was always associated with gambling. But he does not have the same support in his condemnation of chess.<sup>2</sup> This game was sometimes played for a stake, and in such circumstances is disapproved ; but generally it is considered lawful provided there is no stake, neglect of prayer, or false swearing connected with it.<sup>3</sup> On children's games which involve gambling he takes a non-committal attitude, mentioning views both for and against. He may have inclined to Al-Hasan's opinion which he quotes, that children are too young to be subject to religious duties.<sup>4</sup>

He condemns the flying of pigeons without giving any reason, possibly because the wrongfulness of the practice was generally recognized. The *Hidāya* condemns it because it produces negligence, and because those engaged in it do it on the roofs of their houses, and so sometimes see the women on neighbouring roofs.<sup>5</sup>

The condemnation of killing animals with clay bullets is

<sup>1</sup> See the relative passage in the trans. of Ibn abi'l-Dunyā's *Censure of Instruments of Diversion*, with references noted there, and *Enc. of Islām*, ii, 1009.

<sup>2</sup> Ibn Qutaiba, *Al-maisir wa'l-qidāh*, 36 f., says that backgammon is to be prohibited because it consists of gambling. While he does not approve of chess, because it makes people neglect religious duties and is played in private, a practice which suggests something evil, he does not feel that it can be prohibited.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, ii, 1009 ; iv, 338. Al-Nawawi (*Minhāj*, 515) includes habitual chess-players among people wanting in seriousness. The *Hidāya* (iii, 377) says that those who gamble at backgammon and chess, or are so engrossed in them that they neglect prayer, are people whose testimony is not accepted. But it adds that the game of chess itself is lawful. *Shī'a* law, however (Querry, ii, 454 f.), forbids both chess and backgammon, even as pastimes.

<sup>4</sup> Al-Jāhīz, *Hayawān*, ii, 106, mentions some authorities who considered children's games lawful, even when they included gambling.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. ibid., iii, 58, where it is said that 'Uthmān ibn 'Affān, the third Caliph, would have liked to kill all pigeons, but decided that only those used by youths and tricksters for wagering and gambling, and by people who go on roofs and overlook their neighbours' women's quarters, should be killed.

natural, because no blood is shed, and therefore such animals are not lawful food.<sup>1</sup>

Ibn abi'l-Dunyā shows his puritan nature in his tract. He evidently felt that time spent on any pursuit which was not of a serious nature was wasted, and so condemned recreations in general.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Hidāya*, iv, 1147, where this is given as the reason for the condemnation.

<sup>2</sup> One game which did not exist in Ibn abi'l-Dunyā's time, but which would certainly have earned his disapproval, is cards. The reason for mentioning this is to correct an error in the *Enc. of Islām*, ii, 1009, where it is said that "the Arabs have never taken to them". The present writer can state from personal observation that cards are very popular among the Arabs of the Aden peninsula and the neighbouring village of Shaikh 'Uthmān. Another game popular there is called *dāma*. It is a game of draughts in which each player has sixteen pieces, and is known in this country as Turkish chess. It may be of interest to remark that the present writer once played a game of *dāma* with an Arab at a coffee shop in Shaikh 'Uthmān, but was advised by some Arab friends not to do so again, as it was not looked upon as respectable.

## II

### IBN ABI'L-DUNYĀ

**A**LTHOUGH Ibn abi'l-Dunyā is among the lesser known Arabic writers, the references to him which have been preserved show that he was generally respected in his own day and that his writings were valued for many centuries after his death.

His full name was Abū Bakr 'Abdallāh<sup>1</sup> ibn Muḥammad ibn 'Ubaid<sup>2</sup> ibn abi'l-Dunyā al-Qurashī al-Baghdādī. He was born in 208 (823) and died in 281 (894). In his history, Ibn al-*Athīr* takes each year by itself, and before passing on to the next, he mentions the famous men who died during the year with which he has just dealt. When he speaks of the year 281, Ibn abi'l-Dunyā is the only one to be mentioned. The notice says, "In it died 'Ubaidallāh ibn abi'l-Dunyā, the writer of the many famous compositions."<sup>3</sup>

He was tutor to the Caliph Al-Mu'tadid<sup>4</sup> and to this Caliph's son, Al-Muktafi.<sup>5</sup> Thus he had influence in the highest circles. But his manner of life was not affected by such exalted connections. He lived a retired life devoted to religion and to study, and looked with displeasure on worldly amusements.

<sup>1</sup> Hājjī Khalīfa, who mentions a number of his works, always gives this form. Cf. iii, 336, iv, 410, etc. The *Fīhrīst* (Cairo edit.), p. 262, and Ibn al-*Athīr*, *Al-Kāmil fi'l-ta'rikh*, vii, 155, give 'Ubaidallāh. A Wiener, in *Der Islam* (1913), p. 279, suggests that the name may have been changed from 'Abdallāh to 'Ubaidallāh under the influence of the name of his grandfather, 'Ubaid, which follows. On the other hand, it may be reasonably argued that the shortening of 'Ubaidallāh is more probable than the lengthening of 'Abdallāh. Brockelmann, in his *Gesch. d. arab. Lit.*, i, 153, gives 'Abdallāh (he says Ibn 'Abdallāh), but in his later article in the *Enc. of Islam*, ii, 355, he gives the longer form in brackets, as an alternative, without comment.

<sup>2</sup> Wiener, loc. cit., adds Ibn Sufyān ibn Qais.

<sup>3</sup> Op. cit., vii, 155.

<sup>4</sup> Ibn Khallikān (De Slane), i, 531 n.

<sup>5</sup> *Fīhrīst* (Cairo), p. 262. Al-Mas'ūdī, *Muṣṭafā al-dhahab*, i, 12.

He was a great student of Tradition, and was quoted by many as an authority. For example, Muhyī al-Dīn ibn al-‘Arabī (d. 638/1240) quotes a tradition about Al-Hasan as coming from the *hadīth* of Ibn abi'l-Dunyā.<sup>1</sup> Yāqūt (d. 626/1229) says that Ibn Māja, Ibn abi'l-Dunyā, and others related traditions on the authority of Al-Zubair ibn Bakkār.<sup>2</sup> Such incidental references suggest that Ibn abi'l-Dunyā was an authority of note.

The *qādī* Yūsuf ibn Ya'qūb offered the prayers at Ibn abi'l-Dunyā's funeral, and the distinguished traditionist, 'Abd al-Rahmān ibn 'Umar, pronounced the *rahhamaka'llāh* (Allāh have mercy on you).<sup>3</sup> The fact that such men took part in his funeral ceremonies would indicate the high position held by Ibn abi'l-Dunyā in the estimation of his contemporaries.

Wiener has collected a list of 102 books by Ibn abi'l-Dunyā,<sup>4</sup> of which only nineteen are extant. Among his books there is a group of seven which are of interest for our present purpose, as they have the common title *dhamm* (censure). They are (1) *Dhamm al-ḥasad* (censure of envy); (2) *Dhamm al-dunyā* (censure of the world); (3) *Dhamm al-ghadab* (censure of anger); (4) *Dhamm al-ghība* (censure of slander); (5) *Dhamm al-fahsh* (censure of obscenity); (6) *Dhamm al-muskir* (censure of intoxicants); (7) *Dhamm al-malāḥī* (censure of instruments of diversion). Of these (2), (6), and (7) are extant. This group, which includes the MS. about to be translated, indicates his attitude of mind. He was the enemy of things which seemed to him to conflict with religion, and he had no hesitation in making a frontal attack upon them.

<sup>1</sup> *Muḥādarāt al-abrār wa musāmarāt al-akhyār*, i, 194.

<sup>2</sup> *Dictionary of Learned Men*, iv, 218. Cf. also *Qūt al-qulūb*, i, 29, where he is quoted as handing down from the Prophet a tradition giving an interpretation of Qur. xxxii, 16.

<sup>3</sup> Wiener, op. cit., p. 280.

<sup>4</sup> Op. cit., pp. 413-419.

The *Fihrist*<sup>1</sup> mentions a book called *Kitāb al-aṣwāt* (the book of the voices). This work is not extant, but its title suggests that it may have given more light on Ibn abi'l-Dunyā's opinions regarding music.

Among the opponents of music Ibn abi'l-Dunyā deserves notice, as his *dhamm al-malāhī* is the earliest book which is known on the subject.

<sup>1</sup> p. 262.

### III

## DHAMM AL-MALĀHĪ.

### THE MS.

THE present text of Ibn abī'l-Dunyā's *Dhamm al-malāhī* is based on a MS. in the Berlin Staatsbibliothek (Ahlwardt, 5504, folios 52b to 61b), from a photographic reproduction kindly supplied by Dr. Henry G. Farmer. It occurs along with a number of treatises on various subjects in the Landberg collection (Lbg. 1019). It is immediately preceded by a *risāla fī'l-samā' wa'l-raqṣ wa'l-surākh wa'stimā' inshād al-shi'r wa qhairihi* (letter on audition, dancing, shouting, and listening to the recitation of poetry, etc.), by Ibn Taimiyya (d. 728/1328); and immediately followed by a short anonymous tract entitled *mau'iṣa fī'l-malāhī* (admonition concerning instruments of diversion). These are all in the same handwriting, and at the end of the last there is a note stating that it was copied in *Dhū'l-Hijja*, 782 (February–March, 1381).

There is a copy of the *Dhamm al-malāhī* in the Zāhirīya in Damascus, mentioned by Ḥabib al-Zaiyāt in his *khazā'īn al-kutub fī Dimashq wa-dawāhīhā*, p. 33, No. 59, 2. Brockelmann, in his Supplement, i, 247, mentions another, the reference being *Defteri K. Lāleli*, Stambul, 1310, 3664 (MO., vii, 107; ZS., i, 217).

The Berlin copy is in a very good state of preservation. A blotch obscures part of the word *al-bāṭil* below the middle of F. 55b, and the word *al-lūṭī* at the top of F. 61a. Two words on F. 60b and one on F. 61a are cut short through coming at the end of a line. Reference is made to them in the notes on the text. Otherwise the MS. is generally easily legible, although the copyist is often careless in his writing.

A few peculiarities of the writing may be mentioned here, as they have been changed without comment to the more normal form in the text given below. *Hamza* is generally omitted, especially when it follows a long vowel ; e.g. سما for سَمَاء. The omission of *hamza* leads to such a form as تاي for تَائِي (F. 58a). Such a word as عائشة always appears as عايشه. The dots on the *tā' marbūta* are almost always omitted. The final *yā'*, when representing the sound *i* or *ai* sometimes has two dots, but more often not. In the text below they are supplied. In names like Ibn 'Abbās, the MS. omits the *alif* of "Ibn". Where there are two ways of spelling a word, e.g. زكوة and زكوة, the form used in the MS. is given. Finally it should be noted that there are some erasures which are indicated by a stroke through part of the word to be erased. Such words are omitted without comment.

## IV

### DHAMM AL-MALĀHĪ : TRANSLATION

THE book of the censure of instruments of diversion<sup>1</sup> by F. 52b.  
Ibn abi'l-Dunyā.

On the authority of Sahl ibn Sa'd<sup>2</sup> (Allāh be pleased with them both !), he said, Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, " Among the last of my people there will be swallowing up, pelting, and metamorphosis."<sup>3</sup> It was said, " O, apostle of Allāh, when ? " He said, " When the *ma'āzif* and the *qaināt* appear, and wine is considered lawful." The *ma'āzif* are musical instruments (*ālāt al-tarab*),<sup>4</sup> and the *qaināt* are the singing-girls. And as for the pelting, it is the throwing F. 53a. of stones [from the sky, just as they were sent on Lot's people, some on tribes and some on houses ; and they will be sent on them]<sup>5</sup> (i.e. the people mentioned in the tradition).

On the authority of Abū Umāma<sup>6</sup> (Allāh be pleased with him !) on the authority of Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless

<sup>1</sup> References to this book usually speak of it as *The Censure of Musical Instruments*, but the word *malāhī*, while it came to be applied to musical instruments, has a wider meaning. It comes from the root *lahw* (diversion) and so means " pastimes ", or " instruments of diversion ". As a considerable part of Ibn abi'l-Dunyā's book is occupied with other amusements than music, he is obviously using the word in the wider sense.

<sup>2</sup> A Companion of the Prophet who handed down traditions. d. 88 (707) or 91 (710). See Al-Nawawi, *Tahdhīb al-asmā'*, 306-7. Al-Tabārī, *Annales*, index.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Al-Tirmidhī, *Fitān*, 21, and Ibn Māja, *Fitān*, 29, where " pelting " and " metamorphosis " are transposed.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, iii, 528, where it is pointed out that, while the word *ma'āzif* in its modern use means " musical instruments ", in its earlier use it applied more particularly to stringed instruments. Here it is explained in a sense agreeing with the modern use.

<sup>5</sup> The words in square brackets are added in the margin followed by the sign  to denote a correction.

<sup>6</sup> A traditionist. d. 81 (700). Al-Nawawi, op. cit., pp. 651-2. Ibn Sa'd, v, 59-60. Al-Nawawi says that he related 250 traditions of which Al-Bukhārī quoted five and Muslim three.

him, etc.), he said, “Some of this people will spend the night in food, drink, and diversion (*lahw*), then in the morning they will have been metamorphosed into apes and swine<sup>1</sup>; and swallowing up and pelting will smite them, so that in the morning people will say, ‘So and so’s house was swallowed up last night.’ ‘The Banū so and so were swallowed up last night.’ And Allāh will send on them ‘the desolating wind’<sup>2</sup> which destroyed ‘Ād for their drinking wine, their devouring usury, their having singing-girls, their wearing silk, and their breach of kinship.’”

And on the authority of ‘Ā’isha<sup>3</sup> (Allāh be pleased with her!), she said, Allāh’s apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, “Among my people there will be swallowing up, pelting, and metamorphosis.” ‘Ā’isha said, “O apostle of Allāh, while they say, ‘There is no god but Allāh’?” He said, “When singing-girls appear, and immorality, drinking of wine, and wearing of silk appear, this will take place among us.”

On the authority of ‘Ali<sup>4</sup> (Allāh be pleased with him!), he said, Allāh’s apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, “When my people do fifteen things [lit. characteristics], that affliction will alight upon them.” It was said, “O, apostle of Allāh, and what are they?” He said, “When the booty is in turns, 53b. and the deposit is booty, and the legal alms is a debt,<sup>5</sup> and a man obeys his wife, and is undutiful to his mother, and is kind to his friend, and repulses his father, and the voices are raised in the mosques, and the leader of the people is the most ignoble of them, and a man is honoured for fear of his evil, and wine is drunk, and silk is worn, and singing-girls, and stringed instruments (*ma’āzif*) are employed, and

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Qur. v, 65, for the idea of such metamorphosis. A similar tradition occurs in Ibn Māja, ii, 254.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Qur. li, 41.

<sup>3</sup> Wife of the Prophet. d. 58 (678). See *Enc. of Islām*, i, 216-17.

<sup>4</sup> Son-in-law of the Prophet and fourth Caliph. d. 40 (661). See *Enc. of Islām*, i, 283-5. The tradition which follows is given, with a number of verbal changes, by Al-Tirmidhī, *Fitan*, 38.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. Qur. ix, 99.

the last of this people curses the first of it, then at that time let them expect three [afflictions], a destructive wind, being swallowed up, and metamorphosis."

The *shaikh*<sup>1</sup> (Allāh have mercy on him !) said, I said, His saying 'When the booty is in turns' : i.e. the princes and kings get hold of the spoils and control them successively among themselves, and do not divide them among the soldiery who took them. And 'The deposit is booty' : i.e. the people, because of their treachery, come to reckon the riches with which they are entrusted as spoil which they seize. One is entrusted with a deposit, or made an executor, or appointed to a guardianship. The trusty one dislikes such a thing, because his soul has distress in it ; but the faithless one likes it, because he considers it a profit and a booty which has sped to him. 'And the legal alms is a debt' : i.e. the rich people of that time have no intention in the seeking of reward when they produce the legal alms on their goods, and they produce them only by compulsion on the part of the sultān, or out of hypocrisy before men<sup>2</sup> ; so they reckon F. 54a. its expenditure a debt with which they are saddled, not a reward which they have sent before them. His saying, 'And is kind to his friend and repulses his father.' He blamed them only for kindness to their friends, but it was not out of relationship ; it was out of love between them only in the life of this world. And if that kindness had been purely for the sake of Allāh, he would not have been repulsing his father.

And on the authority of Abū Huraira<sup>3</sup> (Allāh be pleased with him !), he said, Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, "In the last time some of this people will be metamorphosed into apes and swine." They said, "O, apostle of Allāh, they testify that there is no god but Allāh, and that Muhammad is Allāh's apostle." He said, "Yes, indeed, and

<sup>1</sup> i.e. the author.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Qur. ii, 266 ; iv, 42.

<sup>3</sup> One of the most frequently quoted authorities for traditions. d. 57 or 58 (676-8). See *Enc. of Islam*, i, 93-4.

they fast, pray, and perform the pilgrimage.” They said, “Then what is the matter with them ?” He said, “They have employed stringed instruments, tambourines (*dufūf*), and singing-girls, and spent the night at their drinking and their diversion, so in the morning they will have been metamorphosed into apes and swine.”<sup>1</sup>

And on the authority of Šālih ibn Khālid<sup>2</sup> who traced that back to the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.), he was saying, “Some of my people will consider silk, wine, and stringed instruments lawful ; and Allāh will come with a mountain upon people of them who are present until He casts it upon them, and others will be metamorphosed into apes and swine.”

F. 54b. And on the authority of Jubair ibn Nufair,<sup>3</sup> he said, Allāh’s apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, “Verily the earth will be difficult for its people, so that there will be on its surface neither townspeople nor nomads, and the last of this people will be afflicted with trembling. Then if they repent, Allāh will forgive them ; but if they return, Allāh will turn against them with trembling, pelting, metamorphosis, and thunderbolts.”

His saying, “The earth will be difficult for its people” : i.e. the earth, on account of the violence of the earthquakes and the abundance of the terrors, will remain like the back of an intractable camel on which neither rider nor load can settle without its throwing it off, so that there will not be on its surface people of a house who are united, whose affair is in order, without their being scattered and separated by being killed and taken prisoner and by oppression and being smitten and such like of the things which separate companies and empty camps. And he who considers this time of ours

<sup>1</sup> For a tradition resembling this in some respects, but on different authority, see *Al-Bukhāri*, *Aṣḥriba*, 6.

<sup>2</sup> I have found no reference to this man. He may possibly have been a son of Khālid ibn al-Walid (d. 21/641-2).

<sup>3</sup> He was Jubair ibn Nufair al-Hadrami, who became a Muslim during the Caliphate of Abū Bakr, and was quoted as an authority on tradition. d. 80 (699).

will find that this has become abundant among this its people.

On the authority of Ṣuhār,<sup>1</sup> he said, Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, "The last hour will not come before some tribes are swallowed up, and it is said they are of the Banū so and so."

And Abū Huraira (Allāh be pleased with him !) used to say, "The last hour will not come before two men go to a matter which they are undertaking and one of them is metamorphosed into an ape or a swine ; and the one of them who escaped what he saw happen to his companion will not be prevented from going to that affair of his so as to accomplish his desire F. 55a, respecting it ; or before two men go to a matter and engage in it and one of them is swallowed up, and the one of them who escaped what he saw happen to his companion will not be prevented from going to that affair of his so as to accomplish his desire respecting it."<sup>2</sup>

And Mālik ibn Dīnār<sup>3</sup> said, "I have heard that there will be a violent wind in the last time, so people will flee to their learned ones and find that they have been metamorphosed."

On the authority of Abū Umāma, he said, Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, "Allāh has forbidden the singing-girl and selling her and her price and teaching her and listening to her."<sup>4</sup> Then he recited His saying (exalted is He) "Among

<sup>1</sup> The *Fīhrīst* (Cairo ed.), p. 132, calls him Ṣuhār ibn al-‘Abbās al-‘Abdi, and says he was a genealogist and preacher in the time of Mu‘āwiya ibn abī Sufyān (first Umayyad Caliph, d. 60/680). He related a few traditions on the authority of the Prophet, and wrote *Kitāb al-amthāl* (Book of Proverbs). Ibn Sa‘d, v, 409–410 ; vii, i, 61–2, state merely that the Prophet told him wine was forbidden.

<sup>2</sup> Reminiscent of Matthew xxiv, 40 ; Luke xvii, 34–6.

<sup>3</sup> Mālik ibn Dīnār (d. 131/749) was an authority on tradition who did not relate many traditions. He was noted for his learning, asceticism, and piety. Ibn Sa‘d, vii, ii, 11 ; Ibn Khallikān (De Slane), ii, 549–551.

<sup>4</sup> Al- Ghazālī *JRAS.* (1901), 244–5, quotes this tradition on the authority of ‘A’isha, and says that it applies to singing-girls who sing where there is drinking, and to strange women who sing to men of dissolute life ; but not to a girl who sings to her master, or who sings in circumstances where there is no temptation. He adds that the two *Sahīhs* speak of the Prophet

men are those who buy sportive talk".<sup>1</sup> Then he said, "By Allāh, it is singing and things like that."

And Ibn Mas'ūd<sup>2</sup> said. "Singing makes hypocrisy grow in the heart as water makes the seed grow."<sup>3</sup> And from him, he said, Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, "Singing makes hypocrisy grow in the heart as water makes vegetables grow."<sup>4</sup>

And on the authority of Ibn 'Abbās<sup>5</sup> (Allāh be pleased with him!) concerning His saying (exalted is He), "And you are amusing yourselves,"<sup>6</sup> he said, "It is singing in the Ḥimyarite language: *usmud lanā* means 'sing to us'." He means that it was the language of Ḥimyar of the people of Al-Yaman. When they ordered the singer to sing to them,

F. 55b. they said *usmud lanā*.

listening to the singing of two girls in 'Ā'iša's house (cf. Al-Bukhārī, 'Idain, 2). Al-Nābulusī (op. cit., p. 41) makes the same quotation and adds that those who prohibit all singing-girls are guilty of finding fault with the Prophet.

<sup>1</sup> Qur. xxxi, 5. The quotation should be extended, as the verse adds "to lead astray from Allāh's path". Al-Ghazālī (op. cit., 245), in dealing with this verse, says that all singing is not an exchange for religion.

<sup>2</sup> One of the first converts to Islām and one of those to whom the Prophet promised Paradise. d. 32 or 33 (652-4). He was a traditionist and an authority on the Qur'ān. See *Enc. of Islām*, ii, 403-4.

<sup>3</sup> Al-Ghazālī (op. cit., pp. 248-9) and Al-Nābulusī (op. cit., p. 41) mention this tradition. Al-Ghazālī says that hypocrisy grows in the singer and not in the listener. Certain lawful practices produce hypocrisy, such as the wearing of adornments, but that does not make them unlawful. Therefore this tradition cannot mean that singing is unlawful.

<sup>4</sup> Al-Ghazālī (op. cit., p. 248) says that this form of the tradition is not sound.

<sup>5</sup> 'Abdallāh ibn al-'Abbās, a cousin of the Prophet. He was an authority on tradition, jurisprudence, and the Qur'ān. d. 69 or 70 (688-690). See *Enc. of Islām*, i, 19-20.

<sup>6</sup> Qur. liii, 61. Al-Baidāwī, in his commentary on this verse, says that *sāmidūna* either means that they are proud, because the verb *sāmada* is used of a camel walking with its head up; or that they are singing to keep people from listening to Allāh's message, because *sumūd* means "singing".

Al-Ghazālī (op. cit., 245-6) argues that if this verse condemns singing, it also condemns laughter and lack of weeping. If it is said that it condemns laughter against Muslims, it may be replied that this is the only kind of singing it condemns. Cf. Farmer, *History of Arabian Music*, p. 15.

And Ibn Mas'ūd said, "When a man rides a beast without mentioning Allāh (exalted is He), the devil rides behind him. He says to him, 'Sing'; then if he does not do it well, he says to him, 'Do obeisance.'"

On the authority of Abū Umāma (Allāh be pleased with him!) that the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, "No one raises his voice in song without Allāh sending him two devils who sit on his shoulders, kicking his breast with their heels till he stops."<sup>1</sup>

And Ibn 'Umar<sup>2</sup> passed some people in pilgrim garb among whom was a man who was singing, and said, "O may Allāh not listen to you! O may Allāh not listen to you!" And he passed a young girl who was singing and said, "If He abandoned anyone, He would abandon this girl."

A man asked Al-Qāsim ibn Muḥammad<sup>3</sup> about singing and he said, "I forbid you from it and make it abhorrent to you." He said, "Is it unlawful?" He said, "Look, O son of my brother; when Allāh distinguishes the truth from what is vain, in which of them will He put singing?"<sup>4</sup>

Al-Sha'bī<sup>5</sup> said, "Allāh curse the singer and the one who is sung to!"

It is said that there was a man who spent much time in

<sup>1</sup> Al-Nābulusī (op. cit., 41) mentions this tradition in speaking of the arguments adduced by opponents of music.

<sup>2</sup> 'Abdallāh ibn 'Umar, son of the second Caliph. He was a Companion of the Prophet, and a trustworthy authority on tradition. d. 73 (693). See *Enc. of Islām*, i, 28-9. Add to the references given there Ibn Sa'd, iv, i, 105-138.

<sup>3</sup> A grandson of Abū Bakr, the first Caliph. He was one of the most eminent of the Followers and was reckoned among the seven great jurists of Al-Madīna. Mālik said that he was one of the great jurisconsults of the Muslims. d. 101 or 102 (719-721), or 108 (726-7), or 112 (730-1). Ibn Sa'd, v, 139-143. Ibn Khallikān (De Slane), ii, 485-6.

<sup>4</sup> Al-Quṣhārī, *Risāla*, 179, tells how Ibn Juraij (d. between 149 and 151/766-8) was asked a similar question, and replied that his listening to music would be placed neither among his good deeds nor his evil deeds, meaning that it was one of the things which are permitted.

<sup>5</sup> Abū 'Amr 'Āmir ibn Sharāḥil ibn 'Amr al-Sha'bī. He was a trustworthy authority on tradition. The *imām* Abū Ḥanīfa was among his pupils. d. not later than 110 (728). See *Enc. of Islām*, iv, 242-3.

the mosque, then abandoned it and took a singing-girl with whom he amused himself to the neglect of the mosque. Then one of his brethren wrote to him, saying, "Consider, my brother, from what you have gone out and into what you have entered, towards whom you have turned and who has turned towards you, and from whom you have turned away

F. 56a. and who has turned away from you. For if you consider well, you will know that you have gone out from the light and entered the darkness, and have turned away from Allāh and Allāh has turned away from you."

'Umar ibn 'Abd al-Azīz<sup>1</sup> wrote to his sons' tutor, "Take the course prescribed by harshness, for it is more of a protection for their advancement; and by abandoning morning sleep (*sabha*), for its practice acquires negligence; and by scantiness of laughter, for abundance of it slays the heart.<sup>2</sup> And let the first thing which they acquire from your training be the hatred of instruments of diversion, whose origin is from the devil and whose outcome is the anger of the Merciful. For I have heard from the authorities, viz. the learned, that having recourse to stringed instruments and listening to songs and devotion to them both [i.e. the practices just mentioned] produces hypocrisy in the heart as water produces herbage. And let each boy of them begin with a portion<sup>3</sup> (*juz'*) of the Qur'ān [and] let him be established in reciting it. Then when he has finished it he may take his arrows and his bow and go out bareshod to the target and shoot seven arrows. Then he may go for the siesta, for Ibn Mas'ūd used to say, 'My sons, take a siesta, for the devils do not take a siesta.'<sup>4</sup> His saying *al-sabha*, from which he forbade them, is sleeping after daybreak.

<sup>1</sup> An Umayyad Caliph noted for his piety. d. 101 (720).

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Ibn Māja, *Zuhd*, 19; *Al-'iqd al-farid*, ii, 130.

<sup>3</sup> The Qur'ān is divided into thirty portions, each of which is called a *juz'*. This provides a daily portion for people who wish to read the whole Qur'ān in a month. But here the word is most probably used in a general sense.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *Qūt al-qulūb*, i, 61.

Yazid ibn al-Walid<sup>1</sup> said, “O, Umayyads, avoid singing, F. 56<sup>1</sup> for it decreases shame, increases desire, and destroys manliness, and verily it takes the place of wine and does what drunkenness does. But if you must engage in it, keep the women and children away from it, for singing is the instigator of fornication.”

Al-Fuḍail ibn ‘Iyād<sup>2</sup> said, “Singing is the amulet of fornication.”

Rāfi‘ ibn Ḥafs al-Madānī<sup>3</sup> said, “There are four on whom Allāh will not look on the Day of Resurrection, the sorceress, the wailing-woman, the singing-woman, and the woman who is unfaithful to her husband. Prolonged grief is most fitting for him who reaches that time.”

‘Ali ibn al-Husain<sup>4</sup> said, “A handmaid in whom is the *barbat*,<sup>5</sup> meaning playing on the lute,<sup>6</sup> “is not declared pure.”

On the authority of Zaid ibn ‘Ali,<sup>6</sup> he said, A man said, “O, apostle of Allāh, when is the [last] hour ?” Then Allāh’s apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) rebuked him until [when] he prayed the dawn prayer, he lifted his head to the sky and said, “Blessed is Allāh, its Creator, and its Raiser, and its Changer, and its Folder ‘like the folding of the scroll of the book’.”<sup>7</sup>

Then he said, “Where is he who asked about the [last] hour ?” He said: Then a man at the back of the people

<sup>1</sup> An Umayyad Caliph. d. 126 (744). Cf. Farmer, op. cit., 65.

<sup>2</sup> A trustworthy transmitter of traditions. He was born in Khurāsān and retired latterly to Makkah to devote himself to a religious life. d. 187 (803). See *Enc. of Islām*, ii, 117; Al-Ghazālī, op. cit., 248 n.

<sup>3</sup> I have found no reference to this man elsewhere.

<sup>4</sup> Zain al-‘Ābidin, the fourth of the Shi‘a imāms. d. 92 or 94 (710-13). See *Enc. of Islām*, i, 288.

<sup>5</sup> This is clearly a wrong interpretation of the meaning of *barbat*. The *barbat* is the Persian lute. See *Enc. of Islām*, iv, 985.

<sup>6</sup> Son of Zain al-‘Ābidin. d. 125 or 126 (743-4). See *Enc. of Islām*, iv, 1193-4.

<sup>7</sup> Qur. xxi, 104.

knelt on his knees, and lo, he was 'Umar ibn al-Khaṭṭāb.<sup>1</sup> Then Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, "That will be when the leaders (*imāms*) are unjust and [Allāh's] decree is declared false, and owing to faith in the stars, and in a people who take a deposit as booty and the legal alms

F. 57a. as a debt<sup>2</sup> and immorality as increase (*ziyāda*)."<sup>3</sup> Then he [i.e. 'Umar] asserted that he had asked him about it, so he said, "[There will be] two men of the profligate people one of whom will prepare food and drink for his companion and will come to him with jesting and say, 'Do for me as I have done for you'. Then they will visit one another for that."<sup>4</sup> Thereupon he said, "My people have perished, O Ibn al-Khaṭṭāb."<sup>5</sup>

And from him (Allāh bless him, etc.) that he said when a man questioned him, saying, "O, apostle of Allāh, do you forbid us to weep when you weep?" He said, "I forbade you only two foolish, wicked sounds—[a sound] in a tune of diversion and sport and devil's pipes; and a sound in affliction and scratching of faces and rending of breasts and devil's moaning."<sup>6</sup>

Al-Hasan<sup>7</sup> (Allāh have mercy on him!) said, "Two sounds are accursed, a pipe in a tune and moaning in affliction." And he said, "And Allāh mentioned the believers and said, And 'in their property there is an appointed portion for him who begs and for him who is prevented [from begging]'<sup>8</sup>; but you have set in your property an appointed portion for the woman who sings to a tune and the woman who wails in affliction."<sup>9</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The second Caliph. d. 23 (644).

<sup>2</sup> Ibn Māja, *Zakāt*, 8, gives a tradition which says that one who pays the *zakāt* (legal alms) should pray, "O Allāh, make it a booty and not a debt."

<sup>3</sup> Al-Hasan al-Baṣrī, the famous ascetic. d. 110 (728). See *Enc. of Islām*, ii, 273.

<sup>4</sup> Qur. lxx, 24–5.

<sup>5</sup> See Introduction, p. 2 f. Wailing is condemned, but weeping is lawful. Cf. Al-Tayālī, 1221.

Hudhaifa<sup>1</sup> was relating on the authority of Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.), "Let not the man imitate the woman in her clothing, and let not the woman imitate the man in his clothing."<sup>2</sup> He said, "You send out the women in men's clothes, and you send out the men in women's clothes. There is no innocence, no piety, no zeal, and no shame." He said, "And one dies, then they bring a hired maid who captivates their living ones in their houses and injures their dead ones in their graves, preventing them from their reward in the next world on account of her reward which they give her in the present world."<sup>3</sup> And lo, the wailing-woman may say, 'O man, I command you to do what Allāh has forbidden you, and I forbid you what Allāh has commanded you to do. O, verily Allāh has commanded you to have endurance, and I forbid you to have endurance. O, verily, Allāh has forbidden you to be vexed, and I command you to be vexed.'

On the authority of Nāfi',<sup>4</sup> he said, "I was going along a road with 'Abdallāh ibn 'Umar,<sup>5</sup> when he heard a shepherd's reed-pipe (*zammāra*).<sup>6</sup> So he put his fingers in his ears, then turned aside from the road, and kept saying, 'O, Nāfi', can you hear it?' I said, 'No,' so he took his fingers out

<sup>1</sup> Hudhaifa fought at the battle of Uhud (3/625). 'Umar made him governor of Madā'in where he died in 36 (656-7). Ibn Sa'd, vi, 8; also v, 385; vii, ii, 64; Ibn Khallikān (De Slane), iii, 508.

<sup>2</sup> Al-Bukhārī, *Libās*, 61; Abū Dāwud, *Libās*, 28; Al-Tirmidhī, *Adab*, 34; and Ibn Māja, *Nikāh*, 22, say that the Prophet cursed women who imitated men and men who imitated women.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Al-Bukhārī, *Janā'iz*, 33; Abū Dāwud, *Janā'iz*, 25; Al-Nasā'ī, iv, 15, where it is said that the dead are punished when their people weep over them.

<sup>4</sup> A freedman of 'Abdallāh ibn 'Umar, most of whose traditions are handed down through Nāfi'. The latter had a high reputation for exactness. Ibn Khallikān (De Slane), iii, 521-2.

<sup>5</sup> See p. 25, n. 2.

<sup>6</sup> Al-Ghazālī, op. cit., 248-250, in referring to this story, uses *mizmār*. For the *zammāra* and the modern *zummāra*, which is a double-reed pipe, see *Enc. of Islam*, iii, 541; Farmer, *Studies in Oriental Mus. Instrs.*, i, 77-9.

of his ears, then returned to the road and said, 'Thus I saw Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) do.''"<sup>1</sup>

Anas<sup>2</sup> (Allāh be pleased with him!) said, "The worst earnings are the earnings of the reed-pipe."<sup>3</sup>

F. 58a. On the authority of [Abū] Umāma<sup>4</sup> (Allāh be pleased with him!), he said, Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, "Allāh sent me as a blessing and guidance to all creatures. He sent me to annihilate the stringed instruments and the reed-pipes (*mazāmīr*) and to destroy the *jāhilīya*<sup>5</sup> and the idols. And my Lord swore by His might, No one will drink wine in this world, but He will give him a like quantity in the worst [part] of hell on the Day of Resurrection. And no one will leave it alone in this world, but He will give him it to drink in the holy precincts until his soul is satisfied."

And from Muḥammad ibn al-Munkadir,<sup>6</sup> that he said, "When the Day of Resurrection comes, He will keep calling, Where are those who kept themselves away from diversion and the devil's reed-pipes? Make them dwell in the garden of musk. Then He will say to the angels, Let them hear praise and laud of me, and inform them that 'there is no fear upon them and they will not grieve'."<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Abū Dāwud, *Adab*, 52, gives a form of this tradition, but adds a note that it was said to belong to one of the weak categories (*munkar*). Ibn Māja, *Nikāh*, 22, has a tradition on the authority of Mujāhid which tells of Ibn 'Umar putting his fingers in his ears when he heard a drum played and saying the Prophet had done the same. Al-*Ghazālī*, op. cit., 248–250, speaks of the tradition given in the text and argues that it does not condemn the shepherd's pipe, as the Prophet possibly put his fingers in his ears to keep his thoughts from being interrupted. Al-*Nābulusī*, op. cit., 40, uses the same argument.

<sup>2</sup> Anas ibn Mālik. He had been a servant of the Prophet. Many traditions have been handed down on his authority, but he was not regarded as very reliable. d. between 91 and 93 (709–712). See *Enc. of Islām*, i, 345.

<sup>3</sup> Lane, *Lexicon*, 1250, translates *zammāra* as "fornicatress", or "female singer".

<sup>4</sup> See p. 19, n. 6.

<sup>5</sup> This term is used of the pre-Islāmic period.

<sup>6</sup> An eminent Qur'ān-reader and traditionist. The imām Mālik was one of his pupils. d. 131 (748–9). Ibn Khallikān (De Slane), ii, 119 n.

<sup>7</sup> Qur. ii, 36, 59, etc.

On the authority of Mujāhid<sup>1</sup> concerning the saying of Allāh (exalted is He), “And excite those of them whom you can with your voice”<sup>2</sup>; he said, “The reed-pipe.” “And charge them with your horse and with your foot”<sup>2</sup>; he said, “Every rider who has ridden in disobedience to Allāh is among the cavalry of Iblis, and every foot which has run in disobedience to Allāh is among the footmen of Iblis.”

On the authority of Ibn ‘Abbās,<sup>3</sup> on the authority of the F. 58b. Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.), he said, “Allāh has forbidden you wine, *al-maisir*,<sup>4</sup> and the *kūba*, which is the drum (*tabl*).”<sup>5</sup> And he said, “Every intoxicant is forbidden.”<sup>6</sup>

On the authority of Qais ibn Sa‘id,<sup>7</sup> that Allāh’s apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, “My Lord forbade me wine, *al-maisir*, the *qinnīn*, and the *kūba*.” *Al-maisir* is gambling; the *qinnīn* is the lute (*‘ūd*),<sup>8</sup> and it is said the *qinnīn* is one of the playthings used in gambling; and the *kūba* is the drum (*tabl*), and it is said it is the lute (*‘ūd*) and backgammon (*nard*).

Suwaid ibn Ghafala<sup>9</sup> said, “The angels do not enter a house in which is a tambourine (*duff*).”

<sup>1</sup> Mujāhid ibn Jabr. An authority on tradition. d. in Makka between 102 and 104 (720-3). Ibn Sa‘d, v, 343-4.

<sup>2</sup> Qur., xvii, 66.

<sup>3</sup> See p. 24, n. 5.

<sup>4</sup> A game of the pre-Islāmic Arabs which was prohibited by Muḥammad. Lots were cast by means of arrows for portions of a camel. Later *al-maisir* came to be used as synonymous with gambling (cf. p. 36). See *Enc. of Islām*, iii, 155-6.

<sup>5</sup> See Introduction, p. 3, n. 2.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. Al-Nasā’i, viii, 296; Ibn Māja, ii, 173.

<sup>7</sup> The MS. gives Qais ibn Sa‘id, but I have found no reference to such a person. It may possibly be an error for Qais ibn Sa‘d, who was made governor of Egypt by ‘Ali in 37 (657-8). He later acknowledged Mu‘āwiya, ‘Ali’s rival, and returned to Al-Madina, where he died in 59 (678-9). Ibn Sa‘d, v, 355; vi, 34; Ibn Khall. (De Slane), i, 622 n.

<sup>8</sup> Dr. H. G. Farmer has drawn my attention to the fact that Al-Firūzābādī says it is the pandore (*tanbūr*).

<sup>9</sup> Suwaid became a Muslim in the lifetime of the Prophet, but never saw him, as he came to Al-Madina on the day the Prophet died. He is therefore reckoned a Follower (*Tābi‘i*). He took part in several famous battles and is quoted as a traditionalist. He died at a great age in 81 or 82 (700-2). Al-Nawawi, op. cit., 309-310; Ibn Sa‘d, vi, 45.

Al-Hasan<sup>1</sup> said, “The tambourine does not pertain at all to the practice of the Muslims.”

‘Āsim ibn Hubaira<sup>2</sup> used not to see a tambourine without breaking it. Then when he was old he took a tambourine and began to trample on it with his feet, but it did not break. So he said, “Not one of their devils has overcome me but this.”<sup>3</sup>

Ibrāhim<sup>4</sup> said, “They were seizing the openings of the streets, tearing up the tambourines which the girls had.” He means Ibn Mas‘ūd’s<sup>5</sup> companions. They were standing at the ends of the streets to remove this forbidden thing.

On the authority of Buraida<sup>6</sup> (Allāh be pleased with him!), that the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, “He who plays backgammon (*nardashīr*) has disobeyed Allāh and His apostle.”<sup>7</sup> And on his authority that he heard Allāh’s apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) saying, “No one turns over its dice expecting what they will produce without disobeying Allāh and His apostle”; meaning one who plays with the dice of backgammon when he throws them waiting for what will issue to him from them of victory and success, for that is the gambler, and the gambler is a profligate.

F. 59a.

<sup>1</sup> See p. 28, n. 3.

<sup>2</sup> The only reference I have found to ‘Āsim is in Al-Ṭabarī, *Annates*, ii, 1804, where he is spoken of in connection with Yazid’s rebellion against Al-Walid in 126 (744).

<sup>3</sup> The breaking of musical instruments is considered by some to be quite legal. Cf. Introduction, p. 3. Al-Bukhārī, *Mazālim*, 32, says that Shurāh came on a pandore which had been broken, but gave no judgment regarding it.

<sup>4</sup> Ibrāhim ibn Adham, a famous ascetic. d. between 160 and 166 (776–783). See *Enc. of Islām*, ii, 432–4.

<sup>5</sup> See p. 24, n. 2.

<sup>6</sup> Buraida accepted Islām on meeting Muḥammad during his migration (*hijra*) from Makka to Al-Madina. At the conquest of Makka he had a standard. He afterwards went to Al-Baṣra. Later he went to Khurāsān and died in Marw in 63 (682–3). Add to the references in *Enc. of Islām*, i, 793, Ibn Sa‘d, vii, i, 3, 4; vii, ii, 99 f.

<sup>7</sup> Abū Dāwud, *Adab*, 56, and Ibn Māja, *Adab*, 42, give this tradition on the authority of Abū Mūsā al-Aṣḥārī, except that *nard* (backgammon) is used in place of *nardashīr*.

From him (Allāh bless him, etc.) that he said, “The similitude of him who plays backgammon (*nard*), then rises and prays, verily Allāh does not accept his prayer, and his similitude is like that of him who performs his ablution with pus and swine’s blood.”<sup>1</sup>

From him (Allāh bless him, etc.) that he said, “Fear these two marked (*mashūmatain*) games which draw omens, for they belong to the *maisir* of the Persians.” He called them *al-mashūmatain* simply on account of the black spots which are in them, for they are in them like tattooing.<sup>2</sup> And his phrase ‘which draw omens’, i.e. they bring forth the lot without right or principle, and it comes only by chance, just as the one who draws omens from birds does. He is the one who takes the omen from their voices and is correct and wrong without right or principle.

Ibn ‘Umar<sup>3</sup> said, “He who gambles at backgammon is like him who anoints himself with swine’s *wadak*,” meaning its grease.

From Yahyā ibn [abi] Kuthaiyir,<sup>4</sup> that he came upon some people playing at backgammon and said, “Neglectful hearts, busy hands, and deceiving tongues.”

‘Abdallāh ibn Nāfi<sup>5</sup> was questioned about chess and backgammon and said, “I have never come across one of our learned ones who has not disliked them both.” Mālik<sup>6</sup> used

<sup>1</sup> Muslim, v, 74–5; Abū Dāwud, *Adab*, 56; and Ibn Māja, *Adab*, 42, give the following on the authority of Burāida, “He who plays backgammon (*nardashir*) is as though he had plunged his hand into swine’s flesh and blood.”

<sup>2</sup> The text has *mashūmatain* (marked), and Ibn abi'l-Dunyā explains it thus; but the latter part of his explanation might suggest that the reading should be *mash'ūmatain* (ill-omened).

<sup>3</sup> See p. 25, n. 2.

<sup>4</sup> Ibn Sa'd, v, 404, gives the name as Yahyā ibn abi Kuthaiyir. He was a freedman of Tai'. d. 129 (746–7).

<sup>5</sup> ‘Abdallāh ibn Nāfi<sup>5</sup> was devoted to Mālik ibn Anas. He died in Al-Madīna in 206 (821–2). Ibn Sa'd, v, 324–5.

<sup>6</sup> The imām Mālik ibn Anas. d. 179 (795–6). See *Enc. of Islām*, iii, 205 ff.

to say the same thing. He was questioned about their testimony, and said, "Their testimony is not accepted, and there is no honour that one should be hiding that and not making it public." Thus Mālik used to say, and similarly about F. 59b. chess. What he said about singing was, "Testimony is not accepted on account of it."<sup>1</sup>

From 'Alī<sup>2</sup> (Allāh be pleased with him!) that he came upon some people who were playing chess and said, "What are these figures about which you are zealous?<sup>3</sup> If one of you touches live coals till they are extinguished, it will be better for him than that he should touch them."

Abū Ja'far<sup>4</sup> was questioned about chess and said, "Let us have nothing to do with this Magianism."

Ibrāhīm<sup>5</sup> was asked, "What do you say about the pieces (*lu'ab*) in chess?" Then he said, "They are accursed."

A Syrian saw in his sleep that every believer and Muslim is forgiven twelve times every day except the companions of the Shāh, meaning chess.

Mālik said, "Chess pertains to backgammon."

We heard concerning Ibn 'Abbās<sup>6</sup> that he was put in charge of an orphan's property and found them [i.e. chess pieces] and destroyed<sup>7</sup> them.

<sup>1</sup> *Aghānī*, iv, 39, suggests that Mālik was better disposed to singing than this passage suggests. One day, on hearing a passer-by making a mistake in a song, he put his head out of the window and corrected him. But he refused to repeat the correction lest the man should announce that he had learned it from him. This may indicate that his personal inclinations were different from his official declarations. It is said in the same place that in youth he had wished to be a singer, but his mother advised him to take up *fiqh* (jurisprudence) instead, on the ground that, with his ugly face, he would never be a successful singer, whereas an ugly face was no hindrance to a jurist's success. With regard to backgammon and chess see Introduction, p. 12, n. 2.

<sup>2</sup> See p. 20, n. 4.

<sup>3</sup> Qur. xxi, 53.

<sup>4</sup> Al-Anṣārī. He was an authority on tradition. He died during the Caliphate of the last Umayyad Caliph, Marwān ibn Muḥammad (127-132/744-750). *Ibn Cateiba's Handbuch der Geesch.*, p. 262; Ibn Sa'd, v, 4.

<sup>5</sup> See p. 32, n. 4.

<sup>6</sup> See p. 24, n. 5.

<sup>7</sup> ? Burned.

Ibn 'Umar<sup>1</sup> was questioned about chess and said, "It is worse than backgammon from two points of view. One of them is that the heart is not occupied in backgammon with prolonged thought as in chess, for it [chess] requires prolonged thought and leads to waste of time. The second is that there is not so much quarrelling among players of backgammon as among players of chess,<sup>2</sup> for their idle talk about it is abundant and their disputing about it is violent. And further, people's inclination for chess is stronger and their occupation with it is greater. So on this account he said it is worse than backgammon. And he knew that the statute about the prohibition of backgammon is sound and the general agreement (*ijmā'*) about it united, contrary to chess, for it (backgammon) is much easier." F. 60a.

Aiyūb<sup>3</sup> saw some people playing chess and said, Muḥammad ibn al-Munkadir<sup>4</sup> told us, he said, "He who plays backgammon has disobeyed Allāh and His apostle." Someone said to him, "This is not backgammon." He said, "Backgammon and chess are alike."

On the authority of Ṣāliḥ ibn al-Khalil<sup>5</sup> that Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) ordered see-saws<sup>6</sup> (*marājīḥ*) to be suppressed. When Abū Burda<sup>7</sup> saw any of his people

<sup>1</sup> See p. 25, n. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Whether or not this was the general rule, we learn from *Agh.*, v, 89, that a serious quarrel could also arise over backgammon. There it says that Al-Fadl ibn al-Rabi' (d. 208/823-4) became so angry with Ishaq ibn Ibrāhīm that he refused to admit him to his presence.

<sup>3</sup> Ibn abi Tamim. He met a number of famous men, including Ibn al-Munkadir whom he quotes here. He was a reliable authority for tradition. d. 131 (748-9). Al-Nawawī, op. cit., 170-1.

<sup>4</sup> See p. 30, n. 6.

<sup>5</sup> This may have been a son of Al-Khalil ibn Aḥmad (d. between 170 and 175/786 and 791).

<sup>6</sup> Abū Dāwud, *Adab*, 55, quotes traditions about 'Ā'iša amusing herself on a swing (*urjūha*) without any suggestion of disapproval. This word is from the same root as *marjūha*, and the two are said to refer to the same thing. Cf. Lane, *Lexicon*, 1035.

<sup>7</sup> There were two men called Abū Burda in the early days of Islām, either of whom might be the one mentioned here. One, was Hāni' ibn 'Amr ibn 'Ubaid, who was a transmitter of traditions, and died in 45 (665-6)

and his children playing on see-saws, he beat them and broke the see-saws.

On the authority of 'Aṭā,<sup>1</sup> Tāwus,<sup>2</sup> and Mujāhid,<sup>3</sup> they said, "Everything which has to do with gambling pertains to *al-maisir*, even the play of children with dice and walnuts."<sup>4</sup>

Ibn Sīrīn<sup>5</sup> said, "Whatever thing there is in which there is gambling, or shouting, or evil, it pertains to *al-maisir*."<sup>6</sup>

Al-Ḥasan<sup>7</sup> was asked about fragments of eggs. He said, "It is not sound". And concerning him [it is reported] that he was giving children permission to gamble with eggs,<sup>8</sup>

or 42 (662-3). Al-Nawawī, op. cit., 653; *Ibn Coteiba*, op. cit., 135. The other was 'Āmir ibn abī Mūsā. He succeeded Shurāīh as *qādī* of Al-Kūfā. d. between 103 and 107 (721-6). Ibn Sa'd, vi, 187; Ibn Khall. (De Slane), ii, 2-4; *Ibn Coteiba*, 136. It is possible that the man referred to is the latter.

<sup>1</sup> 'Aṭā' ibn abī Rabāḥ was a native of Al-Janad in Al-Yaman. He was a famous jurisconsult and authority on tradition. He became *muftī* in Makka. d. 114 or 115 (732-4). See *Enc. of Islām*, i, 504, for references.

<sup>2</sup> 'Abd al-Raḥmān Tāwus ibn Kaisān al-Khāntanī al-Hamdānī al-Yamānī. His real name is said to have been Zakwān. He was a freedman of Hamdān. He heard traditions from Ibn 'Abbās and Abū Huraira, and his authority was quoted by Mujāhid and 'Amr ibn Dīnār. He was eminent among the Followers (*tābi'īs*) and held high rank as a jurisconsult. He was called Tāwus (peacock) because he was the peacock (chief) of the Qur'ān-readers. Ibn Khall. says he died in 104 or 106 during the pilgrimage, and that the Caliph said the funeral prayers over him. Ibn Sa'd says he died at the pilgrimage in 106 and that the Caliph Hishām ibn 'Abd al-Malik was present at his funeral. If Hishām was Caliph at the time, the date must have been 106 (725), as Hishām became Caliph in 105. Ibn Sa'd, v, 391-5; Ibn Khall. (De Slane), i, 642-3.

<sup>3</sup> See p. 31, n. 1.

<sup>4</sup> Al-Jāḥīz, *Kitāb al-hayawān*, ii, 106, quotes examples of approval given to children's games, even though they involved gambling. The only prohibition mentioned has to do with playing with dogs.

<sup>5</sup> b. 33 (653-4), d. 110 (728). He was an important traditionalist and a noted jurisconsult in Al-Baṣra. He was a friend of Al-Ḥasan al-Baṣrī, but the friendship was broken. As secretary he served Anas ibn Mālik in Persia. Ibn Sīrīn was noted for his piety, but this did not prevent him from dying in debt. Al-Isbīhī, *Mustatraf*, ii, 295, indicates that he knew and was interested in chess. See *Enc. of Islām*, ii, 420-1, for references.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, iii, 155-6.

<sup>7</sup> Al-Ḥasan al-Baṣrī.

<sup>8</sup> Al-Jāḥīz, op. cit., ii, 106, says that Al-Ḥasan saw no harm in buying the eggs with which boys play. He had the same opinion regarding the walnuts with which they played.

but Ibn Sīrīn disliked it. Ibn al-Musaiyib <sup>1</sup> saw no harm in breaking the eggs with which children gamble. Similarly F. 60b. Al-Ḥasan gave permission concerning this only because he considered that children have no religious duties laid on them (*qhair mukallafīn*). So he considered there was no reason for forbidding them doing [it], contrary to adults, for their gambling is disobedience and what they acquire by it is forbidden.

On the authority of Abū Huraira <sup>2</sup> that Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) saw a man following a pigeon and said, "A devil following a she-devil."<sup>3</sup>

From Al-Mujāhid <sup>4</sup> concerning His saying (exalted is He), "You build on every height (*rī'*) a mark in sport."<sup>5</sup> He said "[It means] pigeon-houses." It is said that the amusements of Pharaoh's people were pigeons. Ibrāhīm <sup>6</sup> said, "He who plays with flying pigeons will not die before experiencing the taste of poverty."<sup>7</sup> And Shuraiḥ <sup>8</sup> would not give shelter to a pigeon owner, or to his pigeons.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Abū Muḥammad Sa'īd ibn al-Musaiyib. His father's name was properly Al-Musaiyab, but Sa'īd pronounced it Al-Musaiyib. He was one of the seven great jurisconsults of Al-Madīna. He was noted for his piety and had a contempt for worldly goods. b. 15 or 16 (636-8), d. between 91 and 95 (709-714), or 105 (723-4). Ibn Sa'd, v, 88-106; Ibn Khall. (De Slane), i, 568-9.

<sup>2</sup> See p. 21, n. 3.

<sup>3</sup> Ibn Māja, *Adab.*, 43; Abū Dāwud, *Adab*, 57.

<sup>4</sup> See p. 31, n. 1.

<sup>5</sup> Qur. xxvi, 128.

<sup>6</sup> See p. 32, n. 4.

<sup>7</sup> Cf. Goldziher, *Muh. Stud.*, ii, 69.

<sup>8</sup> Shuraiḥ was known as Al-Qādī. He was an eminent Follower who was appointed *qādī* of Al-Kūfa by 'Umar; a post which, except for a break of three years, he is said to have filled for seventy-five years! Ibn Sa'd, vi, 90-100; Ibn Khall. (De Slane), i, 619-622. The interesting information is given by Al-Nābulusī, op. cit., 54, that, in spite of his position, Shuraiḥ used to compose tunes and listen to singing girls singing them.

<sup>9</sup> The *Hidāya* (iii, 376) objects to those who fly birds because they go on the roofs of houses and so see the women's quarters, on neighbouring roofs. Cf. Al-Jāḥīz, op. cit., iii, 58.

Sufyān<sup>1</sup> said, “We heard of a game with the *jalāhiq* and a game with pigeons. It is the doing of Lot’s people.”<sup>2</sup> The *jalāhiq* is the bow for clay bullets (*al-bunduq*), and the dislike of it is because it does not make the blood of the game flow, so its game is generally beaten to death.<sup>3</sup>

On the authority of Ibn ‘Abbās<sup>4</sup> that the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, “If one does what Lot’s people did, the one who does it and the one to whom it is done shall be killed.”<sup>5</sup>

Ibrāhīm said, “If there were one who might fittingly be stoned twice, he would be the sodomite (*al-lūtī*).” He means that if it were possible for one who had been stoned to come

F. 61a. to life after his being killed with the stones, he would be the sodomite. If he were stoned and killed by stoning, then came to life, he would deserve to be stoned another time until he was killed. That is, his sin is too great for one stoning to be enough; contrary to the fornicator (*al-zānī*), for, as punishment and purification, stoning once is enough for him, while that is not enough for the sodomite.

Ibn ‘Abbās was asked, “What is the punishment of the sodomite?” He said, “We show our standards in a village and he comes from it, then is followed with stones.”<sup>6</sup>

Mujāhid said, “He who does that action,” meaning the action of Lot’s people, “though he were to wash with every drop that descended from the sky and every drop in the earth, would still be unclean.”

<sup>1</sup> Sufyān al-Thaurī, a famous theologian, traditionist and ascetic. d. 161 (778). *Enc. of Islām*, iv, 500–2.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Goldziher, *Muh. Stud.*, ii, 69.

<sup>3</sup> *Hiḍāya*, iv, 1147 condemns the practice on the same grounds. Al-Jāhīz, op. cit., iii, 58–9, gives examples of the two practices condemned by Sufyān mentioned together with disapproval.

<sup>4</sup> See p. 24, n. 5.

<sup>5</sup> Abū Dāwud, *Hudūd*, 28, and Ibn Māja, *Hudūd*, 12, give this tradition on the authority of Ibn ‘Abbās with slight verbal changes.

<sup>6</sup> The standards of the troops must be meant here. The suggestion seems to be that, when he sees government troops coming, he tries to escape, as he knows that they will deal with him for his wickedness.

Al-Zuhri<sup>1</sup> said, "The sodomite is to be stoned whether or not he has preserved chastity for a year past."

On the authority of Wāthila ibn al-Asqa'.<sup>2</sup> He traced it [to the Prophet]. He said, "Among women with hanging breasts there are sodomites. It is said that they lay with one another in the time of Tubba',<sup>3</sup> and they were the people of *Al-Rass*.<sup>4</sup> They have seventy tunics of fire, vests of fire, and a crown of fire. Inform your women of this."

It was said to Muhammad ibn 'Ali,<sup>5</sup> "Allāh punished the women of Lot's people for the action of their men." Then he said, "Allāh is more just than that. No, the men were satisfied with the men, and the women with the women."

On the authority of Hūbartha ibn Asmā'<sup>6</sup> on the authority F. 61b. of his uncle, he said, "I made the pilgrimage, and we alighted at a halt, and along with us was a woman. She slept and awoke, and a snake was coiled round her with its head joined to its tail in front of her. That terrified us, and we set out, it still being coiled round, nothing harming her, till we entered the stones of the *haram*;<sup>7</sup> then it left her. We entered Makka, performed our rites, and departed till, when we were in the place where it coiled itself round her, she fell asleep and awoke, and the snake was coiled around her. Then the

<sup>1</sup> A celebrated jurisconsult and traditionist. d. 123 or 124 (740-2). He was such an assiduous student that his wife is said to have declared that his books annoyed her more than three other wives would. For details and references see *Enc. of Islām*, iv, 1239-1241.

<sup>2</sup> An Arab of Kināna who became a Muslim when Muhammad was preparing for the expedition of Tabūk (9/630). He was one of the poor Muslims who lived on the veranda of the mosque in Al-Madina (*ahl al-suffa*). After Muhammad's death he went to Syria, where he was noted for his hospitality. He died in Jerusalem in 83 or 85 (702 or 704). Ibn Sa'd, vii, ii, 129; Ibn Khall. (De Slane), iii, 439 n.

<sup>3</sup> A term applied in Arabic literature to the kings of the Ḥimyarites. For a suggestion on the origin of this word see *Enc. of Islām*, ii, 311.

<sup>4</sup> Qur. xxv, 40; 1, 12.

<sup>5</sup> Ibn Sa'd, vi, 257, speaks of a Muhammad ibn 'Ali al-Salmā, but all that is said is that his authority was quoted.

<sup>6</sup> I have found no reference to Hūbartha.

<sup>7</sup> The sacred area which includes Makka.

snake hissed, and lo, the *wādī* was flowing upon us with snakes. Then they bit her till she was left a skeleton. So we said to a servant girl of hers, "Woe to you, tell us about this woman." She said, "She committed fornication three times, each time giving birth to a child. Then when she had given birth to him, she heated the oven and threw him into it."

On the authority of 'Ikrima,<sup>1</sup> he said, "Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) cursed the house which the *mukhannath*<sup>2</sup> enters."

On the authority of 'Uthmān<sup>3</sup> (Allāh be pleased with him !), that he gave twenty lashes to a man who said to another, "O *mukhannath*."

Tāwus (Allāh have mercy on him !) was asked *de eo qui feminam per clunes ineat*,<sup>4</sup> and said, "That is unbelief. Lot's people perished simply for that. *Ad hunc modum viri cum viris, feminae cum feminis coierunt.*"

<sup>1</sup> A Companion of the Prophet. 'Ikrima was killed at the battle of Ajnada in (13/634).

<sup>2</sup> The *mukhannath*s were hermaphrodites, and had an unpleasant reputation. Al-Bukhārī, *Hudūd*, 33, says the Prophet cursed the men who were *mukhannathūna* and the women who imitated men. Some references are given by Farmer, *Hist. of Arab. Music*, 45 n.

<sup>3</sup> The third Caliph. Murdered 35 (656).

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Abū Dāwud, *Nikāh*, 45.

## V

DHAMM AL-MALĀHI

## TEXT

كتاب ذم الملاهي لابن أبي الدنيا. [F. 52b.]

عن سهل بن سعد<sup>١</sup> رضي الله عنها قال قال رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم يكون في آخر أمتي خسف وقدف<sup>٢</sup> ومسخ . قيل يا رسول الله متى . قال إذا ظهرت العازف والقينات واستحللت الخمرة . والعاذف هي آلات الطرف والقينات الجواري المغنتيات . [F. 53a.] وأمّا القذف فهو الرمي بالحجارة [من السماء كما أرسلت على قوم لوط على قبائل منها وعلى دور منها وليرسلن عليهم .]

عن أبي أمامة رضي الله عنه عن رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم قال يبيت قوم من هذه الأمة على طعام وشراب ولهو فيصيرون قد مُسخوا قردة وخنازير وليصيدهم خسف وقدف حتى يصبح الناس فيقولون خسف الليلة بدار فلان خسف الليلة يبني فلان وليرسلن الله

<sup>١</sup> MS. سعيد . <sup>٢</sup> MS. وقذف .

<sup>٣</sup> The passage in brackets is added in the margin of the MS., and is followed by "صح" to indicate that it is a correction.

عليهم الرجح المقيم التي أهلكت عادا بشربهم<sup>١</sup> الحر  
وأكلهم الربا واتخاذهم القينات ولبسهم الحرير وقطيعتهم  
الرحم.

وعن عائشة رضي الله عنها قالت قال رسول الله  
صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يَكُونُ فِي أُمَّتِي خَسْفٌ وَقَدْفٌ وَمَسْخٌ.  
قالت عائشة يا رسول الله وهم يقولون لا إله إلا الله.  
قال إذا ظهرت القينات وظهر الزنا وشرب الحر ولبس  
الحرير كان ذا عندنا.

عن علي رضي الله عنه قال قال رسول الله صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِذَا عَمِلْتَ أُمَّتِي خَمْسَ عَشَرَةَ خَصْلَةَ حَلَّ  
بِهَا ذَلِكُ الْبَلَاءُ. قِيلَ يا رسول الله وما هن؟ قال إذا  
كان المفمن دولا [F. 53b.] والأمانة مفينا والزكوة مفرما  
وأطاع الرجل زوجته وعق أمته وبر صديقه وجفا أباه  
وارتفعت الأصوات في المساجد وكان زعيم<sup>١٠</sup> القوم أرذلهم

<sup>١</sup> MS. بشربهم.

<sup>٢</sup> MS. ما. <sup>٣</sup> Al-Tirmidhi, *Fitan* 38. فعلت.

<sup>٤</sup> Following Tir. ; MS. has خَسْفٌ <sup>٥</sup> MS. حَضْلَه. <sup>٦</sup> Tir. خَسْفَه عَسْرٌ.

<sup>٦</sup> Wanting in Tir.

<sup>٧</sup> Tir. فَقِيلَ.

<sup>٨</sup> Tir. <sup>٩</sup> MS. المساجد. <sup>١٠</sup> MS. ازعيم.

<sup>١٠</sup> MS. ازعيم.

وأَكْرَمَ الرَّجُلَ خَافَةً شَرَّهُ وَشَرَبَ الْحَمْرَ<sup>١</sup> وَلَبِسَ الْحَرِيرَ  
وَاتَّخَذَتِ الْقِيَنَاتِ وَالْمَعَازِفَ وَلَعْنَ آخَرَ هَذِهِ الْأُمَّةِ أَوْلَاهَا  
فَلَيَرْتَقِبُوا عِنْدَ ذَلِكَ ثَلَاثَةً رِيحَانَهُ حَمَرَاءُ وَخَسْفَاً وَمَسْخَاً.

قَالَ الشَّيْخُ رَحْمَهُ اللَّهُ قَلْتُ قَوْلَهُ إِذَا كَانَ الْمَقْنُمُ دُولَةً  
أَيْ تَنْلُبُ الْأَمْرَاءَ وَالْمَلُوكَ عَلَى الْفَنَائِمِ فَيَدَاوِلُونَهَا بَيْنَهُمْ  
وَلَا يَقْسُمُونَهَا فِي الْجَنْدِ الَّذِي غَنَمُهَا<sup>٢</sup>. وَالْأَمَانَةُ مَغْنِمٌ أَيْ  
يَصِيرُ النَّاسُ لَخِيَانَتِهِمْ يَعْدُونَ الْأَمْوَالَ الَّتِي يَؤْتَمِنُونَ عَلَيْهَا  
غَنِيمَةً يَنْتَمِنُونَهَا<sup>٣</sup> يَوْدِعُ إِلَيْهِ وَدِيْعَةً أَوْ يَوْصِي إِلَيْهِ وَصِيَّةً  
أَوْ يَوْكِلُ فِي وَكَالَةٍ وَشَبَهَهُ يَكْرَهُهُ الْأَمِينُ لِأَنَّهُ لِنَفْسِهِ فِيهِ  
عَنَاءٌ وَيَحْبَهُ الْخَائِنُ لِأَنَّهُ يَرَاهُ رِبَحًا وَمَغْنِمًا قَدْ سَبَقَ إِلَيْهِ  
وَالْزَّكَاةُ مَغْرِمٌ أَيْ لِيْسَ لِأَغْنِيَاءِ ذَلِكَ الزَّمَانِ نِيَّةً فِي طَلْبِ  
الْأَجْرِ إِذَا أَخْرَجُوا زَكَوْنَاتَ أَمْوَالِهِمْ وَإِنَّهَا يَخْرُجُونَهَا  
بِقَهْرِ السُّلْطَانِ [F. 54a.] أَوْ لِرِيَاءِ النَّاسِ فَيَعْدُونَ خَرْوْجَهَا  
مَغْرِمًا يَغْرِمُونَهُ<sup>٤</sup> لَا ثَوَابًا قَدَّمُوهُ. قَوْلَهُ وَبِرَّ صَدِيقِهِ وَجْفَا  
أَبَاهُ إِنَّمَا عَابَ عَلَيْهِمْ بَرَّ أَصْدَقَائِهِمْ<sup>٥</sup> إِلَّا أَنَّهُمْ لَمْ يَكُنْ إِلَّا

<sup>١</sup> Tir. وَشَرِبَتِ الْحَمْرَ. For gender of vb. in text cf. Wright, *Arabic Grammar*, i, 180c.

<sup>٢</sup> MS. رَحْمَةً. Tir. أوْ. حَمَرَاءً. مَلَكَاتٍ.

<sup>٣</sup> MS. يَغْنِمُونَهَا. Following Tir. ; MS. غَنِيمَةً.

<sup>٤</sup> MS. صَدِيقَاهُمْ. Tir. يَغْرِمُونَهَا. MS. يَغْنِمُونَهَا.

<sup>٥</sup> MS. غَنِيمَةً.

إِنَّمَا كَانَتْ مَوْدَّةُ بَنِيهِمْ فِي الْحَيَاةِ الدُّنْيَا وَلَوْ كَانَ ذَلِكَ الْبَرُّ  
لِلَّهِ خَالِصًا لَمْ يَكُنْ لِأَيِّهِ جَافِيًّا .<sup>١</sup>

وعن أبي هريرة رضي الله عنه قال قال رسول الله  
صلى الله عليه وسلم يمسخ قوم من هذه الأمة في آخر  
الزمان قردة وخنازير . قالوا يا رسول الله يشهدون ان لا  
إله إلا الله وأنّ محمداً رسول الله . قال بلى ويصومون  
ويصلون ويحجّون . قالوا فما بالهم . قال اتّخذوا العازف  
والدفوف والقينات فباتوا على شرّ بعهم ولهوهم فأصبحوا  
وقد مسخوا قردة وخنازير .

وعن صالح بن خالد رفع إلى النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم كان يقول ليستحلن أناس من أمتي الحرير والخز والماعاف ول يأتي الله على أهل حاضر منهم يحبيل حتى ينبذه عليهم ويمسخ آخرهن قردة وخنازير .

وعن جبير بن نفير قال قال رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم لست تستصعبن [F. 54b] الأرض بأهلها حتى لا

<sup>۱</sup> MS. خافیا.	<sup>۲</sup> MS. هر ره.	<sup>۳</sup> MS. شریهم.	<sup>۴</sup> MS. الحالد.
<sup>۵</sup> MS. کان سقول.	<sup>۶</sup> MS. بحبل.	<sup>۷</sup> MS. و مسخ.	<sup>۸</sup> MS. فرده.
<sup>۹</sup> MS. و خناربر.	<sup>۱۰</sup> MS. خسیر.	<sup>۱۱</sup> MS. بن.	

يكون على ظهرها أهل بيت مدر ولا وبر ولبيتين آخر<sup>١</sup>  
 هذه الأمة بالرجف فإن تابوا تاب الله عليهم وإن عادوا  
 عاد الله عليهم بالرجف والقذف والمسخ والصواعق .  
 قوله لستصعب الأرض بأهلها<sup>٢</sup> أي تبقى الأرض  
 لشدة الزلزال وكثرة الأحوال كظاهر البعير الصعب  
 الذي لا يستقر عليه راكب ولا حمل إلا ألقاه حتى لا  
 يكون على ظهرها أهل بيت مجتمع شملهم منظم أمرهم  
 إلا تشتتوا وتفرقوا بالقتل والسيي والجور والفلاء وما يشبه  
 ذلك من مفرقات الجموع ومخليات الربوع . ومن اعتبر  
 زماننا هذا وجده قد كثر في أهله هذا .

عن صحار قال قال رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم  
 لا تقوم الساعة حتى ينحسف<sup>٤</sup> بقبائل فيقال من بني فلان .  
 وكان أبو هريرة<sup>٥</sup> رضي الله عنه يقول لا تقوم  
 الساعة حتى يشي الرجالن إلى الأمر يعلمونه فيمسخ  
 أحدهما<sup>٦</sup> قردا أو خنزيرا فلا يمنع الذي نجا منها ما رأى  
 بصاحبه أن [F. 55a.] يشي إلى شأنه ذلك حتى يقضي

<sup>١</sup> MS. ولبيتين . <sup>٢</sup> MS. أهلها . <sup>٣</sup> MS. تبقا . <sup>٤</sup> MS. ينحسف .  
<sup>٥</sup> MS. هررمه . <sup>٦</sup> MS. أحدهما .

شهوته منه وحتى يمشي الرجلان إلى الأمر فيعملانه فيخسف بأحدهما فلا يمنع الذي نجا منها ما رأى بصاحبه أن يمضي إلى شأنه ذلك حتى يقضي شهوته منه . وقال مالك بن دينار <sup>بلغني</sup> <sup>أن</sup> ريحها تكون في آخر الزمان عظيمة <sup>¹</sup> فيفزع الناس إلى علمائهم فيجدونهم قد مسخوا .

عن أبي أمامة قال قال رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم إن الله قد حرم القينة وبيعها <sup>²</sup> وثنها وتعليمها والاستماع إليها . ثم قرأ قوله تعالى ومن الناس من يشتري لهو الحديث . فقال والله هو الغناء وأشباهه .

وقال ابن مسعود الغناء ينبع النفاق في القلب كما ينبع الماء الزرع . وعنده قال قال رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم الغناء ينبع النفاق في القلب كما ينبع الماء البقل . وعن ابن عباس رضي الله عنه في قوله تعالى وأنت سامدون قال هو الغناء بالحميرية . اسمد لنا أي عننا لنا .

<sup>¹</sup> This reading is given tentatively. The MS. has وظيمة.

<sup>²</sup> MS. وبيعها.

<sup>³</sup> MS. وتعليمها.

يعني أنّ لغة حير من أهل اليمن إذا أمر وا الفتى أن  
ينتّيهم [F. 556.] قالوا اسد لنا .

وقال ابن مسعود إذا ركب الرجل الدابة ولم يسم الله  
تعالى رده الشيطان . قال له تفته فإن كان لا يحسن قال  
له تفته .

عن أبي أمامة رضي الله عنه أنّ النبيَّ صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قال ما رفع أحد صوته ببناء إلا بعث الله إليه  
شيطانين يجلسان على منكبيه يضران بأعقابهما على صدره  
حتى يمسك .

ومر ابن عمر على قوم محربين وفيهم رجل ينتي فقال  
ألا لا سمع الله لكم ألا لا سمع الله لكم . ومن بخارية  
صغرى تفتي فقال لو ترك أحدا لترك هذه الجارية .

وسائل إنسان القاسم بن محمد عن الغناء فقال أنه لا  
عنه وأكرهه لك . قال أحرام هو . قال انظر يا ابن أخي  
إذا ميّز الله الحق من الباطل في أيّها يجعل الغناء .

وقال الشعبي لعن الله المغنى والمفتى له .

<sup>١</sup> MS.

القسم <sup>٢</sup> MS.

يجعل <sup>٣</sup> MS.

قيل وكان رجل يكثر الجلوس في المسجد فتركه  
واتخذ قينة ولها بها عن المسجد فكتب إليه <sup>١</sup> بعض إخوانه  
يقول انظر يا أخي من أي شيء خرجت وفي أي شيء  
دخلت وعلى من أقبلت ومن أقبل عليك وعمن أعرضت  
ومن أعرض عنك فإنك <sup>٢</sup>[F. 56a.] إن أحسنت النظر علمت  
أنك خرجت من النور ودخلت في الظلمة وأعرضت عن  
الله وأعرض الله عنك .

وكتب عمر بن عبد العزيز إلى مؤدب <sup>٣</sup> ولده خذهم  
بالجفاء فهو أمن لا يقدامهم وترك الصبحة فإن عادتها  
تكتب الفلة وقلة الضحك فإن كثرت تحيي القلب  
وليكن أول ما يعتقدون من أدبك بغض الملاهي التي  
بدؤها من الشيطان وعاقبتها سخط الرحمن فإنها بلغني عن  
الثقة من حملة العلم أن حضور المعاذف واستماع الأغاني  
واللهمج بها ينبع النفاق في القلب كما ينبع العشب الماء .  
وليفتح كل غلام <sup>٤</sup> منهم بجزء من القرآن يثبت في قراءته  
إذا فرغ منه تناول نبله وقوسه وخرج إلى الغرض حافيا

<sup>١</sup> MS. الله.

<sup>٢</sup> MS. بن.

<sup>٣</sup> MS. مودب.

<sup>٤</sup> MS. علام.

<sup>٥</sup> MS. بجزء.

فرمى سبعة أرشاق ثم انصرف إلى القائلة فإنَّ ابنَ مسعودَ كان يقول يا بنيَّ قيلوا فإنَّ الشياطين لا تقيل . قوله الصبحَةُ التي نهَاهم عنها فإنَّها هي النوم بعد طلوعِ الصبح . [F. 56b.] وقال يزيدُ بنُ الوليدَ يا بنيَّ أميَّة إيتاكم والغناءُ فإنَّه ينقصُ الحياة ويزيده الشهوة ويهدمُ المروة وإنَّه لينوبُ عنَّ الخمرِ ويفعلُ ما يفعل السكرُ فإنَّ كنتم لا بدَّ فاعلينَنْ بختيَّه النساء والصبيان فإنَّ الغناء داعية الزنا .

وقال الفضيلُ بنُ عياضَ الغناء رقية الزنا .

وقال رافعُ بنَ حفصِ المدنيَّ أربعةٌ لا ينظرُ الله إليهم يومَ القيمة الساحرة والنائحة والمعنىة والخائنة لبعدها . منْ أدركَ ذلكَ الزمانَ فالأولى به طولُ الحزن .

وقال عليٌّ بنُ الحسينِ ما قُدستَ أمةٌ فيها البربط يعني اللعب بالعود .

عن زيدٍ بنِ عليٍّ قال قال رجلٌ يا رسولَ الله متى

<sup>١</sup> MS. بزيدٍ منْ . <sup>٢</sup> MS. والغنى .

<sup>٣</sup> The gender may be explained as due to some such word as أشخاص understood. Otherwise, as all those referred to are women, one might have expected أربعٍ . . . . إلَيْهِنَّ .

<sup>٤</sup> MS. بـ . . . . إلَيْهِنَّ . <sup>٥</sup> MS. بـ . . . . إلَيْهِنَّ .

الساعة . فزبره رسول الله صلّى الله عليه وسلم حتى [إذا] صلّى الفجر رفع رأسه إلى السماء فقال تبارك الله خالقها ورافعها ومبدلها وطاويعها كطي السجل للكتاب . ثم قال أين السائل عن الساعة . قال فجئنا رجل من آخر القوم على ركبتيه فإذا هو عمر بن الخطاب . فقال رسول الله صلّى الله عليه وسلم ذلك عند حيف الأئمة وتكذيب بالقدر وإياعنا بالنجوم وقوما يتخذون الأمانة مفينا والزكوة [F. 57a.] مغرا ما والفاحشة زيادة . فزعم أنه سأله إياته عنها . فقال الرجلان من أهل الفسق يصنع أحدهما لصاحب طعاما وشرابا ويأتيه بالمزاه ف يقول اصنع لي كما صنعت لك فيتزاوران على ذلك . فعند ذلك قال هلكت أمتي يا بن الخطاب .

وعنه صلّى الله عليه وسلم أنه قال حين سأله رجل فقال يا رسول الله أتنهانا عن البكاء وتبكي قال إنما نهيت عن صوتين أحقين فاجرين [صوت] عند نفمة لهو ولعب ومن أمير شيطان وصوت عند مصيبة وخمس وجوه وشقّ جيوب ورنة شيطان .

فجئنا رجلا

\* MS.

وقال الحسن رحمه الله صوتان ملعونان من مار عند نعمة ورثة عند مصيبة . وقال وذكر الله المؤمنين فقال وفي أموالهم حق معلوم للسائل وللمحروم وجعلتم أنتم في أموالكم حقا معلوما للمفتية عند النعمة وللنائحة عند المصيبة .

وكان حذيفة<sup>٣</sup> يحدث عن رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم لا يتشبه الرجل بالمرأة [F. 576.] في لبسها ولا تتشبه المرأة بالرجل في لبسه . قال وأنتم تخرجون النساء في ثياب الرجال وتخرجون الرجال في ثياب النساء . لا بره ولا تقوى ولا غيرة ولا حياء . قال ويعوت الميت فياتون بأمة مستأجرة تفتنه<sup>٤</sup> أحياءهم في دورهم وتهذي أموالهم في قبورهم أجرهم في الآخرة لما يعطونها من أجرها في الدنيا .وها عسى أن تقول النائحة أيها الناس إنني آمركم بما نهاكم الله عنه وأنهاكم عما أمركم الله به . ألا إن الله

<sup>١</sup> Qur. lxx, 24, has *الَّذِينَ* may be intentional, as the sentence reads better without it in this context, but it is unusual to omit anything from a Qur'anic quotation.

<sup>٢</sup> MS. النعه.

<sup>٣</sup> MS. حذيفة.

<sup>٤</sup> MS. تفتنه.

أمر بالصبر وأنا أنهاكم أن تصبروا . ألا إن الله نهاكم عن  
الجزاء وأنا آمركم أن تجزعوا .

وعن نافع قال كنت أسيء مع عبد الله بن عمر في  
طريق فسمع زمتارة راعٍ فوضع أصبعيه في أذنيه ثم  
عدل عن الطريق فلم يزل يقول يا نافع أتسمع . قلت لا .  
فأخرج أصبعيه من أذنيه ثم رجع إلى الطريق وقال  
هكذا رأيت رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم صنع .  
وقال أنس رضي الله عنه أخبت الكسب كسب  
الزمّارة .

[F. 58a.] وعن [أبي]<sup>١</sup> أمامة رضي الله عنه قال قال  
رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم إن الله بعثني رحمة وهدى  
للعالمين بعثني لامحق المعاذف والمزامير وأمزق الجاهليّة  
والاؤثان وحلف ربّي بعّزّته لا يشرب أحد الخمر في  
الدنيا إلّا سقاها في شرّ الحميم يوم القيمة ولا يدعها  
أحد في الدنيا إلّا سقاها إيتها في حضيرة القدس حتى  
تقنع نفسه .

<sup>١</sup> MS. omits. أبي

<sup>٢</sup> MS. مي

<sup>٣</sup> MS. يوم

وعن محمد بن المنكدر <sup>١</sup> أنه قال إذا كان يوم القيمة  
ينادي ينادي أين <sup>٢</sup> الذين كانوا ينزعون أنفسهم عن الله  
ومن أمير الشيطان أسكنوهم رياض المساك . ثم يقول  
للملائكة أسمعوهم حمدي وثناي <sup>٣</sup> وأعلموهم ألا خوف عليهم  
ولا هم يحزنون <sup>٤</sup> .

وعن مجاهد في قول الله تعالى واستقرز من استطعت  
منهم بصوتك . قال المزمار . واجلب عليهم بخيلك  
ورجلك . قال كل راكب ركب في معصية الله فهو في  
خييل إبليس وكل رجل سمعت في معصية الله فهي في  
رجل إبليس .

وعن ابن عباس عن [F. 58b.] النبي صلى الله عليه  
وسلم قال إن الله حرم عليكم الحمر والميسر والكوبة وهي  
الطيب . وقال كل مسكن حرام .

وعن قيس بن سعيد <sup>٥</sup> أن رسول الله صلى الله عليه  
وسلم قال إن ربى حرم علي الحمر والميسر والقنيين  
والكوبة . الميسر هو القمار والقنيين هو العود وقيل <sup>٦</sup> القنيين

<sup>١</sup> MS. ن.

ان. <sup>٢</sup> MS.

وثنائي. <sup>٣</sup> MS.

بحزنون. <sup>٤</sup> MS.

سعد. <sup>٥</sup> MS.

وقبل. <sup>٦</sup> MS.

لعبة من لعب القمار والكوبه الطبل وقيل المود والنرد .

وقال سويد بن<sup>١</sup> غفلة<sup>٢</sup> الملائكة لا تدخل بيته دف<sup>٣</sup> .

وقال الحسن ليس الدف<sup>٣</sup> من سنة المسلمين في

شي<sup>٤</sup> .

وكان عاصم بن هبيرة لا يرى دف<sup>٣</sup> إلا كسره . فلما<sup>٥</sup> كبر أخذ دف<sup>٣</sup> فعمل يطاً عليه برجليه<sup>٦</sup> فلم ينكسر فقال لم يغلبني<sup>٧</sup> شيطان لهم غير هذا .

وقال إبراهيم<sup>٨</sup> كانوا يأخذون بأفواه السكك يخرقون الدفوف<sup>٩</sup> التي مع الجواري . يعني أصحاب ابن مسعود كانوا يقفون في رؤوس<sup>١٠</sup> الدروب لإزالة هذا المنكر .

عن بريدة رضي الله عنه أنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قال من لعب بالنردشير<sup>١١</sup> فقد عصى الله ورسوله . وعنه أَنَّه سمع رسول الله صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ يقول لا يقلب

<sup>١</sup> MS. بْن. <sup>٢</sup> MS. غَفَلَة. <sup>٣</sup> MS. بَرْجَلَه. <sup>٤</sup> MS. يَغْلِبُنِي.

<sup>٥</sup> This word has an *alif* in the MS. in this instance. In other places the *alif* is omitted. As either form is allowable, the spelling of the MS. is reproduced in each instance.

<sup>٦</sup> MS. رُوْس. <sup>٧</sup> MS. بَالنَّرْدَشِير.

كما بها أحد ينتظر ما تأتي به إلا عصى الله ورسوله . يعني اللاعب بكماب النرد إذا ضرب بها ينتظر [F. 59a.] ما يخرج له منها من الظفر والفوز فذلك هو المقامر والمقامر فاسق .

وعنه صلّى الله عليه وسلم أَنَّه قَالَ مِثْلُ الَّذِي يَلْعَبُ بِالنَّرْدِ ثُمَّ يَقُولُ فِي صَلَاتِي إِنَّ اللَّهَ لَا يَقْبِلُ صَلَوَتِهِ وَمِثْلُهُ كُثُلُ الَّذِي يَتَوَضَّأُ بِالْقِبْحِ وَدَمِ الْخَنْزِيرِ .

وعنه صلّى الله عليه وسلم أَنَّه قَالَ اتَّقُوا هَاتِيْنِ الْعَبْتَيْنِ الْمَشْوَمَتَيْنِ الَّتِيْنِ تَزْجِرَانِ زَجْرَانِ إِنَّهُمَا مِنْ مَيْسِرِ الْعَجْمِ . إِنَّهَا سَمَّاهُمَا الْمَشْوَمَتَيْنِ لَا فِيهِمَا مِنْ النَّقْطِ السَّوْدِ فِيهِيْ فِيهِمَا كَالْوَشْمِ . وَقَوْلُهُ تَزْجِرَانِ زَجْرَانِ أَيْ تَخْرِجَانِ النَّصِيبُ بِغَيْرِ حَقٍّ وَلَا أَصْلٍ وَإِنَّهَا هُوَ مِنْ جَهَةِ الْاِتْفَاقِ كَمَا يَفْعُلُ زَاجِرُ الطِّيرِ وَهُوَ الَّذِي يَأْخُذُ الْفَأْلَ مِنْ أَصْوَاتِهِ فِي صِيبٍ وَيَنْخُطِيْ بِغَيْرِ حَقٍّ وَلَا أَصْلٍ .

وَقَالَ ابْنُ عُمَرَ الْلَّاعِبُ بِالنَّرْدِ قَارَا كَالْمَدْهَنْ بُودُكُ الْخَنْزِيرُ يَعْنِي بِدْهَنَهُ .

وعن يحيى بن [أبي]<sup>٣</sup> كثيير أنه مرّ على قوم يلعبون بالنرد فقال قلوب لاهية وأيدي عاملة وألسنة لاغية.

وسئل عبد الله بن نافع عن الشطرنج والنرد فقال ما ادركت أحدا من علمائنا إلا وهو يكرهها . هكذا كان مالك يقول . وسئل عن شهادتهم فقال لا تقبل شهادتهم ولا كرامة أن يكون يخفي ذلك ولا يعلمه . وهكذا كان مالك يقول وكذلك في الشطرنج<sup>٤</sup> [F. 59b.] قوله في الغناء<sup>٥</sup> لا تقبل له شهادة<sup>٦</sup> .

وعن عليّ رضي الله عنه أنه مرّ على قوم يلعبون بالشطرنج فقال ما هذه التمايل التي أنتم لها عاكفون لئن يمس أحدكم جرا حتى يطفأ فخير<sup>٧</sup> له من أن يمسها<sup>٨</sup> . وسئل أبو جعفر عن الشطرنج فقال دعونا من هذه المحبوبة<sup>٩</sup> .

وقيل لإبراهيم ما تقول في اللعب بالشطرنج<sup>١٠</sup> فقال إنها ملعونة<sup>١١</sup> .

<sup>١</sup> MS. بـيـهـيـ . <sup>٢</sup> MS. بـنـ . <sup>٣</sup> MS. omits. <sup>٤</sup> MS. هـكـذاـ .  
<sup>٥</sup> MS. سـهـادـهـ . <sup>٦</sup> MS. الشـطـرـنـجـ . <sup>٧</sup> MS. الشـطـرـنـجـ . <sup>٨</sup> MS. سـهـادـهـ .  
<sup>٩</sup> MS. وـشـيلـ . <sup>١٠</sup> MS. بـيـطـفـيـ . <sup>١١</sup> MS. بـخـيرـ . <sup>١٢</sup> MS. الشـطـرـنـجـ .

ورأى رجلٌ من الشام في منامه أَنَّه يغفر لِكُلِّ  
مؤمنٍ ومسلمٍ في كُلِّ يوم اثنتَا عشرةً مِرْتَةً إِلَّا أَصْحَابُ  
الشَّاهِ يَعْنِي الشَّطْرُنجَ.

وقال مالك الشطرنج من النرد.

وبلغنا عن ابن عباس أَنَّه وَالِي مالٍ يَتِيمٍ فوجدها  
فأَخْرَقَهَا.

وَسُئِلَ أَبُونَعْمَانَ عَنِ الشَّطْرُنجِ فَقَالَ هِيَ شَرٌّ مِنِ النَّرْدِ  
مِنْ وَجْهِيْنِ أَحَدُهُمْ أَنَّ النَّرْدَ لَيْسَ فِيهِ مِنْ شُغْلٍ لِلْقَلْبِ  
بِطْوَلِ الْفَكْرِ مِثْلُ مَا فِي الشَّطْرُنجِ فَإِنَّهَا تَحْتَاجُ إِلَى طَوْلِ  
الْفَكْرِ فَتَؤْدِي إِلَى تَضِيِّعِ الْوَقْتِ . الْثَّانِي أَنَّ النَّرْدَ لَيْسَ  
بَيْنَ أَهْلِهِ فِيهِ مِنِ الْمَنَازِعَةِ مِثْلُ مَا فِي الشَّطْرُنجِ فَإِنَّ لِغُوْمَهِ  
عَلَيْهَا كَثِيرٌ وَجَدَالُهُمْ فِيهَا شَدِيدٌ وَمَعَ ذَلِكَ فَإِنَّ مَيْلَ النَّاسِ  
إِلَى الشَّطْرُنجِ أَشَدَّ [F. 60a.] وَاشْتَفَالُهُمْ بِهِ أَكْثَرُ . فَلَهُمْ  
قَالَ شَرٌّ مِنِ النَّرْدِ . وَهُوَ يَعْلَمُ أَنَّ النَّصَّ فِي تَحْرِيمِ النَّرْدِ<sup>10</sup>

<sup>1</sup> MS. وَرَاهُ رِجَالًا.

<sup>2</sup> MS. اثنتَا عَشَرَ.

<sup>3</sup> MS. الشَّطْرُنج.

<sup>4</sup> MS. فَأَخْرَقَهَا؟

<sup>5</sup> MS. الشَّطْرُنج.

<sup>6</sup> MS. اَشَر. This correction is made to agree with the form which occurs at the beginning of F. 60a. It is the better form.

<sup>7</sup> MS. تَحْرِيم. <sup>8</sup> MS. الشَّطْرُنج. <sup>9</sup> MS. تَضِيِّع.

<sup>10</sup> MS. شَر.

صحيح والإجماع عليهما منعقد بخلاف الشطرنج فلأنهما أيسر بكثير.

ورأى أئب قوماً يلعبون بالشطرنج فقال حدثنا محمد بن المنكدر قال من لعب بالنرد فقد عصى الله ورسوله. قليل له ليس هذا نرداً. فقال النرد والشطرنج سواء.

وعن صالح بن الخليل أنَّ رسول الله صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ أَمَرَ بِقَطْعِ الْمَرَاجِعِ . وَكَانَ أَبُو بَرْدَةَ إِذَا رَأَى أَحَدًا مِنْ أَهْلِهِ وَوْلَدَهُ يَلْعَبُ عَلَى الْمَرَاجِعِ ضَرَبَهُمْ وَكَسَرَهُ .

وعن عطاء وطاوس ومجاحد قالوا كل شيء من القمار فهو من الميسر حتى لعب الصبيان بالكماب والجوز. وقال ابن سيرين ما كان من شيء فيه قرار أو صياغ أو شر فهو من الميسر.

وسئل الحسن عن دقيق البيض قال لا يصلح . وعنه أنه يرخص في قرار البيض للصبيان . وكان ابن سيرين يكرهه . وكان ابن المسيب لا يرى بأسا بكسر البيض الذي يتقاصر به [F. 60b.] الصبيان . وكذلك الحسن إنما

<sup>١</sup> نرد MS. <sup>٤</sup> بالنرد MS. <sup>٥</sup> بالشطرنج MS. <sup>٦</sup> الشطرنج MS.

<sup>٢</sup> سيرين MS. <sup>٧</sup> بن MS. <sup>٨</sup> والجوز MS. <sup>٩</sup> بالكماب MS.

رَخْصٌ فِي هَذَا لَأْنَهُ رَأَى الصَّبِيَانُ<sup>١</sup> غَيْرَ مَكْلُوفِينَ فَلَمْ يَرِدْ<sup>٢</sup>  
لِفَعْلِهِمْ أَثْرًا فِي التَّحْرِيمِ بِخَلَافِ الْبَالَفِينِ فَإِنَّ قَارِهِمْ مَعْصِيَةٌ  
وَمَا يَكْسِبُونَ<sup>٤</sup> بِهِ حَرَامٌ .

وَعَنْ أَبِي هَرِيرَةَ أَنَّ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ  
رَأَى رَجُلًا يَتَّبِعُ حَمَّامَةً فَقَالَ شَيْطَانٌ يَتَّبِعُ شَيْطَانَهُ .  
وَعَنْ مُجَاهِدٍ فِي قَوْلِهِ تَعَالَى تَبَّنُونَ بِكُلِّ رِيعٍ<sup>٧</sup> آيَةً<sup>٨</sup>  
تَبَّنُونَ قَالَ بِرُوجُ الْحَمَّامِ . وَقَيْلَ كَانَ مَلَاعِبَ آلَ فَرْعَوْنَ  
الْحَمَّامِ . وَقَالَ إِبْرَهِيمَ مِنْ لَعْبِ الْحَمَّامِ الطَّيَّارَةُ لَمْ يَمْتَهِنْ<sup>٩</sup>  
حَتَّى يَذُوقَ<sup>١١</sup> طَعْمَ الْفَقْرِ . وَكَانَ شَرِحُ لَا يَجِدُ صَاحِبَ  
حَمَّامٍ وَلَا حَمَّامَهُ .

وَقَالَ سَفِيَانُ إِنَّنَا<sup>١٢</sup> سَمِعْنَا لَعْبَا بِالْجَلَاهِقِ وَلَعْبَا بِالْحَمَّامِ  
هُوَ عَمَلُ قَوْمٍ لَوْطٍ . الْجَلَاهِقُ قَوْسُ الْبَنْدَقِ وَكَرَاهِيَّتُهَا  
لِأَجْلِ أَنَّهَا لَا تُسَيِّلُ دَمَ الصَّيْدِ فَصَيَّدَهَا فِي الْفَالْبِ مُوقَدٌ .

<sup>١</sup> MS. رَا.

<sup>٢</sup> MS. الصَّبِيَانُ or الصَّبِيَانُ.

<sup>٣</sup> MS. بِهِ.

<sup>٤</sup> MS. يَكْسِبُونَ.

<sup>٥</sup> MS. هَرَرَهُ.

<sup>٦</sup> MS. has a form which looks like شَيْطَانَا which might be defended on the ground of its being attracted into the case of رَجُلًا, but it may simply be a carelessly written ن. Ibn Māja, *Adab* 43, and Abū Dāwud, *Adab* 57, have the nominative.

<sup>٧</sup> MS. رِيعٍ.

<sup>٨</sup> MS. ٤١.

<sup>٩</sup> MS. الْحَمَّامِ.

<sup>١٠</sup> MS. مَعْتَهُ.

<sup>١١</sup> MS. مَذُوقٌ.

<sup>١٢</sup> MS. لَا.

وعن ابن عباس<sup>١</sup> أن النبيَّ صلَّى اللهُ عليه وسلَّمَ قال  
فَنَّ عَمَلَ قَوْمٌ لَوْطٌ يَقْتَلُ الْفَاعِلَ وَالْمَفْعُولُ بِهِ .  
وقال إبراهيم لو كان أحد ينبني له [أن]<sup>٢</sup> يرجم مررتين  
لرجم اللوطى<sup>٣</sup> . يعني لو أمكن أن يحيى المرجوم بعد  
قتله بالحجارة [F. 61a.] لكان اللوطى<sup>٤</sup> . إذا رجم وقتل  
بالرجم ثم حي<sup>٥</sup> يستوجب أن يرجم مرة أخرى حتى  
يقتل . أي ذنبه أعظم من أن يكتفي بالرجم مرة واحدة  
بحلaf الزاني فإنه يكفيه<sup>٦</sup> عقوبة<sup>٧</sup> وطهارة<sup>٨</sup> رجم مرة  
واللوطى<sup>٩</sup> لا يكفيه ذلك .

وَسَأَلَ أَبْنَى عَبَّاسَ مَا حَدَّ اللَّوْطَىٰ قَالَ نَنْظُرُ أَعْلَمَنَا  
فِي الْقَرِيَّةِ فَيَأْتِي مِنْهَا<sup>١٠</sup> ثُمَّ يَتَبَعَ<sup>١١</sup> بِالْحَجَارَةِ .  
وَقَالَ مُجَاهِدٌ إِنَّ الَّذِي يَعْمَلُ ذَلِكَ الْعَمَلُ يَعْنِي<sup>١٢</sup> عَمَلٌ

<sup>١</sup> MS. نـ.

<sup>٢</sup> This word is at the end of a line, and there is no room for the whole of the final letter.

<sup>٣</sup> MS. الفاعـ. The word is at the end of a line, leaving no room for the last letter.

<sup>٤</sup> MS. omits. <sup>٥</sup> MS. يعني. <sup>٦</sup> MS. سـد. <sup>٧</sup> MS. بـحـيـا. <sup>٨</sup> MS. مـلـهـ.

<sup>٩</sup> MS. بـلـجـمـ. <sup>١٠</sup> MS. رـجـمـ. <sup>١١</sup> MS. بـكـفـهـ. <sup>١٢</sup> MS. وـحـمـ.

<sup>١٣</sup> MS. وـسـلـ نـ عـاـسـ. <sup>١٤</sup> MS. مـنـهـ. <sup>١٥</sup> MS. بـتـبـعـ.

<sup>١٦</sup> MS. يعني.

قوم لوط لو اغتسل بكل قطرة نزلت<sup>١</sup> من السماء وكل قطرة في الأرض لم يزل نجسا.

وقال الزهري<sup>٢</sup> اللوطي<sup>٣</sup> يرجم أحصن أو لم يحصن سنة ماضية.

وعن وايلة بن<sup>٤</sup> الأسعق رفعه قال سحاق النساء يينهن<sup>٥</sup> لواط وقيل إن<sup>٦</sup> غشيان بعضهن<sup>٧</sup> بعضا كان على عهد تتبع وهن<sup>٨</sup> أصحاب الرس<sup>٩</sup> لهن<sup>٩</sup> سبعون جلبابا<sup>١٠</sup> من نار ودروع<sup>١١</sup> من نار وتابع من نار . أعلموا<sup>١٢</sup> بهذا نساءكم .

وقيل لمحمد بن علي<sup>١٣</sup> عذب الله نساء قوم لوط بعمل رجالهم . فقال الله أعدل من ذلك . بل استغنى الرجال بالرجال والنساء بالنساء .

عن حورثة<sup>١٤</sup> [F. 61b.] بن أسماء عن عمته قال حججت فنزلنا منزلنا ومعنا امرأة فنامت فانتبهت وحيثة منطوية قد جمعت رأسها مع ذنبها بين يديها<sup>١٥</sup> . فهالنا ذلك وارتخلنا فلم تزل منطوية عليها لا يضرها شيء حتى دخلنا أنصاب الحرم فانتابت . فدخلنا مكة فقضينا نسكننا

<sup>١</sup> MS. ذروع . <sup>٤</sup> MS. تزلت . <sup>٧</sup> MS. ابن . <sup>٩</sup> MS. جلباب . <sup>١٢</sup> MS. يديها . <sup>١٤</sup> MS. حورثة . <sup>٥</sup> MS. يديها . <sup>٦</sup> MS. اعلموا .

وانصرفنا حتى إذا كنا بالمكان الذي تطوقت عليها فنامت فاستيقظت <sup>١</sup> والحياة منطوية عليها. ثم صرفت الحياة وإذا بالوادي يسيل علينا حيتان فنهشتها حتى بقيت عظاما. فقلنا لجارية لها ويلك أخبرينا عن هذه المرأة <sup>٢</sup>. قالت بفت ثلات مرات كل مرّة تلد ولدا فإذا وضعته سجرت <sup>٣</sup> التنور ثم ألقته فيه.

وعن عكرمة قال لعن رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم البيت الذي يدخله المخت <sup>٤</sup>. وعن عثمان رضي الله عنه أنه جلد رجلا قال لرجل يامخت <sup>٥</sup> عشرين جلدة.

وسئل طاوس رحمة الله عن الرجل يأتي <sup>٦</sup> المرأة في عجزها <sup>٧</sup> فقال تملك كفر إنما هلكت قوم لوط بذلك <sup>٨</sup> صنعت الرجال بالرجال والنساء بالنساء.

<sup>١</sup> MS. فاستيقظ. The word comes at the end of the line, where there is no room to finish it.

<sup>٢</sup> MS. المرة. <sup>٣</sup> MS. شجرت. <sup>٤</sup> MS. عليه. <sup>٥</sup> MS. يامق.

<sup>٦</sup> MS. عجزها. <sup>٧</sup> MS. بذلك. <sup>٨</sup> MS. بالنساء.

## VI

## MAJD AL-DIN

IBN Khallikān gives this author's name as *Abū'l Futūh*<sup>1</sup> *Al-Ḥamad* ibn *Muhammad* ibn *Muhammad* ibn *Al-Ḥamad*<sup>2</sup> *Al-Ṭūsī Al- Ghazālī*,<sup>3</sup> and his *laqab* as *Majd al-Dīn*. There are different opinions about his *laqab*. On a MS. in Berlin (Ahlwardt 2396) he is called *Shihāb al-Dīn*, and on the title page of the Berlin copy of the *Bawāriq al-ilmā'*, he is called *Najm al-Dīn*. As titles prefaced to MSS. are not necessarily correct, and as there seems to be no certainty in the matter, or method of proving which is the correct *laqab*, it is best to accept that given by Ibn Khallikān.

*Majd al-Dīn* was born at *Tūs* and was a brother of the famous *Abū Ḥāmid al- Ghazālī*. He was a doctor of the *Shāfi'i madhab*, but is said to have been more interested in public preaching than in studying matters of the religious law. Yet, when his brother gave up lecturing in the *Niẓāmīya madrasa* in *Baġhdād*, he took his place for a time. He travelled widely, associating with *Ṣūfīs*, but in general was inclined to solitude. Ibn Khallikān credits him with having had the power of performing miracles.<sup>4</sup> He died at *Qazwīn* in 520/1126.<sup>5</sup>

Brockelmann mentions seven works produced by him.<sup>6</sup> Among his literary productions was a summary in one volume of his brother's *Iḥyā' 'ulūm al-dīn*, which he called *Lubāb al-iḥyā'* (Kernel of the *Iḥyā'*).

<sup>1</sup> This name is also given in Ahlwardt, 2396.

<sup>2</sup> "Ibn Al-Ḥamad" is mentioned only by Ibn Khallikān (i, 79).

<sup>3</sup> Ḥājjī Khalifa, ii, 2450, gives "Al- Ghazālī al-Ṭūsī", but this is the wrong order, since *Tūs* was *Majd al-Dīn*'s birthplace.

<sup>4</sup> These details are taken from Ibn Khallikān (De Slane), i, 79 f.

<sup>5</sup> Loc. cit.; Ḥājjī Khalifa, ii, 2450.

<sup>6</sup> *Gesch. d. arab. Litt.*, i, 426.

His work, translated below, shows that he was a man of decided opinions who could give a reason for the faith that was in him. He is perfectly convinced that he is right, and so he deals hard blows to his opponents. One of his favourite methods of argument is to face his opponents with a tradition which shows that the Prophet approved of what they condemn, so indicating that they are criticizing the Prophet. Then comes the smashing blow, "If that flutters in anyone's thought, he is an infidel by general consent."

Although his famous brother wrote at length on the subject of listening to music, Majd al-Dīn by no means copied him when he wrote on the same subject. The *Bawāriq al-ilmā'* is an independent work in which Majd al-Dīn deals with the matter in an original manner. If one compares it with his brother's work, it is obvious that, even where they cover the same ground, Majd al-Dīn expresses his own thoughts in his own way. He begins by justifying audition and describing the circumstances in which it can most suitably be conducted.<sup>1</sup> Then follows a long section in which he takes up and demolishes the arguments of his opponents.<sup>2</sup> Next comes a section in which he discusses the nature and value of audition as a spiritual exercise.<sup>3</sup> This is followed by a very valuable section in which he describes in detail how a *dhikr* should be conducted, quoting Qur'ānic and poetical passages which may be suitably used on such occasions.<sup>4</sup> Then the work ends on a despondent note in which he voices the plaint heard in all ages, that things are not what they once were.<sup>5</sup> Altogether it is a very valuable and lively work, infinitely superior to the arid series of quotations produced by Ibn abi'l-Dunyā.

<sup>1</sup> pp. 69-75.

<sup>4</sup> pp. 104-114.

<sup>2</sup> pp. 75-97.

<sup>5</sup> pp. 114-118.

<sup>3</sup> pp. 97-104.

## VII

### BAWĀRIQ AL-ILMĀ‘ : MANUSCRIPTS

**T**HREE are three MSS. extant of Majd al-Dīn's *Bawāriq al-ilmā‘* :—

B. Berlin, Staatsbibliothek (Ahlwardt, 5505, folios 17a to 36b), 20 folios.

C. Cairo, *Dār al-kutub al-miṣrīya* (*Taṣawwuf*, 377), 9 folios.

P. Paris, Bibliothèque Nationale (De Slane, 4580), 12 folios.

Ahlwardt gives 750/1349 as the date of B ; C is dated 1138/1725–6 ; and De Slane places P in the seventeenth century.

The text given below is based mainly on B and P. Of the three MSS. B is the most complete. After folio 26 it omits a passage which would occupy a complete folio ; this is given in P and partly in C. P omits the whole of folio 33a in B, and also from the middle of folio 35a to the end (folio 36b). Otherwise B and P compare very closely, allowing for slight variations such as always occur between MSS. While P is written in a neater hand than B, and has very much fewer omissions of diacritical points, B is on the whole more accurate in the wording, and therefore, when there was any doubt, preference has been given to B in preparing the text below.

C is in a hopeless condition, and therefore it has been felt advisable to ignore it for the main part. To deal with it faithfully would almost necessitate reproducing the whole work, so many are the variations. It may represent someone's excerpts from the work. Passages are out of order, and there are repetitions and omissions. The latter part of the work is wanting. To indicate its condition an analysis of its relation to the text as given below is as follows :—

F. 1a, lines 1, 2, title.

F. 1a, line 3 to f. 1b, line 2 represent pp. 119 to 122, line 2.

F. 1b, lines 2-7 agree with p. 123, lines 5-11 ; lines 8-10 have extra material ; line 11 agrees generally with p. 123, line 13 ; lines 15-18 represent p. 125, lines 1-4 ; lines 10-15 agree with p. 125, lines 5-9 ; lines 18-21 same as p. 125, lines 12 ff. ; line 21 to f. 2a, line 4, have extra material.

F. 2a, lines 5-12 represent p. 126, lines 1-9, with an extra passage in the middle ; lines 12-16 represent p. 126, line 10 to p. 127, line 2, with variations ; lines 16-21 compare with p. 127, lines 3-10.

F. 2b, lines 1-5 perhaps represent p. 127, lines 11-13 with addits ; lines 5-10 give passage on p. 127, line 3 to p. 128, line 4.

F. 3a, lines 9-12 are a corrupt form of p. 128, line 8 to p. 129, line 4.

F. 2b, lines 10-15 have extra material ; lines 15-18 compare with p. 129, lines 7-9.

F. 3a, line 3, is reminiscent of p. 130, lines 4, 5 ; lines 4-9 have extra material.

F. 4a, line 11, has the quotation on p. 131, line 2.

F. 3a, lines 12-21, compare with p. 132.

F. 8b, line 19, is reminiscent of p. 132, lines 8 f.

F. 3b, lines 1-3, represent p. 133, lines 1-4, with omissions ; lines 3-5 have extra material.

F. 4a, lines 12-20, represent p. 133, line 11 to p. 134, line 6, with variations.

F. 2b, line 18, to f. 3a, line 2, has extra material, the beginning of which suggests p. 134, lines 7 f.

F. 5a, lines 4-6, give quotation on p. 134, lines 13 f.

F. 3b, lines 16-21, have extra material.

F. 5b, lines 5-8, represent p. 137, lines 5-8.

F. 3b, lines 5-16, have extra material, the latter part reminiscent of p. 137, lines 10 f.

F. 4a, lines 1-8, compare with p. 138, line 7 to p. 139, line 6 ; lines 8-12 have extra material ; line 20 to f. 4b, line 8, has extra material.

F. 4b, lines 12-16, agree with p. 139, lines 7-11 ; line 16 to f. 5a, line 1, is a comment on the preceding.

F. 5a, lines 1–7, agree with p. 140, lines 3–9; lines 7–8 have extra material; lines 8–10 are a shortened form of p. 140, lines 10 ff.; lines 11–13 have extra material.

F. 6a, lines 18–19, repeat material on p. 140, lines 11 ff.

F. 5b, line 11 to f. 6a, line 1, represent p. 141, line 2, to p. 142, line 2.

F. 5a, lines 13–17, are connected with passage ending p. 142, line 3.

F. 4b, lines 8–12, are connected with passage beginning p. 142, line 4.

F. 5a, line 17 to f. 5b, line 3, compares with p. 142, lines 4–13.

F. 5b, lines 3–5, have extra material; lines 9–11 have extra material.

F. 6a, lines 2–10, have extra material.

F. 6a, line 19, to f. 6b, line 4, compare with p. 147, line 11, to p. 148, line 8.

F. 6b, lines 4–8, represent, with omissions, p. 148, line 9, to p. 149, line 2; lines 8–11 have extra material; lines 11–12 represent p. 148, lines 11 f.

F. 6a, lines 10–18, agree generally with p. 150, line 8 to p. 151, line 2.

F. 7a, lines 1–6, deal with the matter of p. 150, lines 6 f. and p. 151, lines 4–7.

F. 8b, line 13, to f. 9a, line 1, suggest portions of pp. 150 f.

F. 7a, lines 6–13, agree generally with p. 152, lines 1–10; lines 13–18 give passage on p. 152, line 11, to p. 153, line 4 with variations and an inversion.

F. 6b, lines 13–19, agree with p. 154, lines 4–6, 9–12; lines 19–21 have extra material.

F. 8b, lines 4–13, are reminiscent of p. 155, lines 5 ff.

F. 8a, lines 18–19, are like p. 156, lines 4–6.

F. 7a, lines 18–19, agree with p. 156, lines 4–7; line 19 to f. 7b, line 2, have extra material.

F. 7b, lines 2–18, give p. 157, line 7, to p. 158, line 13 in a confused way; lines 18–21 have extra material; line 21

to f. 8a, line 1, seems a confusion of parts of passage in f. 7b, lines 2-18.

F. 8a, lines 1-7, in parts resembles p. 159, lines 5-13; lines 7-11 represent p. 159, line 13 to p. 160, line 5, with omissions and a variation at the end.

F. 2a, lines 4-5, give the tradition on p. 165, lines 5 f.

F. 8a, lines 11-18, have extra material; line 19 to f. 8b, line 4, have extra material.

F. 9a, lines 1-13, have extra material.

From this it is clear that an enormous number of critical notes would be necessary to deal faithfully with the MS. It has been used occasionally when it gives a better reading than the others, but generally it is ignored. It proved to be useful in parts of the passage missing from B.

The MSS. are all in good condition and are legible. P is the neatest. C is written in a very clumsy hand, but it presents fewer problems of decipherment than either of the others. The characteristics of spelling correspond closely to those mentioned in connection with the MS. of Ibn abi'l-Dunyā's work, and the words have been treated similarly.

## VIII

### BAWĀRIQ AL-ILMA‘ : TRANSLATION

**I**N the name of Allāh, the Merciful, the Compassionate. And Allāh bless our master, Muḥammad. Praise be to Allāh, who caused the servants to hear in the first covenant the address, “Am I not your Lord ?”<sup>1</sup> to make perfect the rank of the branches of gnosis, who perfected the intellects of the seekers to comprehend the benefits of the works and the graces, and who removed the veils of their spirits which prevent from rising to the Unitarian Presence by taking away the deviations and vicissitudes, who enslaved their hearts by the light of certainty, and who cleared the mirror of their souls by the powers of achievement (*tamkīn*)<sup>2</sup> so that they found the marks of the revelations and were free from the bondage of desires, and their bodies revolved in audition in search for freedom of the spirit and in eagerness for being granted the glorious things of the revelations ; for they are among the most perfect characteristics of the (God-) fearing man. And I invoke blessing on His prophet, the seal of the apostles, who combines favours and branches of gnosis. Allāh bless him and his Companions with a blessing which will raise him who utters it to the utmost bounds of blessings and noble things.

Says the slave of Allāh<sup>3</sup> who needs the granting of the outpouring of the grace of Allāh (Exalted is He !), who seeks

<sup>1</sup> Qur., vii, 171. All mankind is said to have been brought forth from the loins of Adam and to have acknowledged dependence on Allāh. Cf. Al-Kalābādhī (Arberry), 166.

<sup>2</sup> *Tamkīn* is the highest stage on the mystic path. Al-Qushairī, *Risāla*, p. 48, in speaking of *tamkīn*, says : “One of the *shaikh*es said : The journey of the seekers has reached self-mastery ; and when they master the self, they have arrived.” Cf. *Kashf al-mahjūb*, 371 f. ; M. Smith, *Early Mysticism*, 203.

<sup>3</sup> “B” and “C” have ‘Ubaidallāh, but this is probably an error, as it does not appear to have been one of the author’s names. If it is to be retained, it should be translated : “The little slave of Allāh.”

refuge in the presence of Allāh, Aḥmad ibn Muḥammad ibn Muḥammad al-Ṭūsī al-Ghazalī—May Allāh (Exalted is He !) join him to His pious servants in the abode of fixity: One of the upright who turn towards Allāh in joy and grief asked me to write for his sake in particular and for the seekers in general, a letter about audition, its benefits, and the conditions of performing it, that its benefits might appear testified to in the Qur'ān, the Hadīth, and the deeds of the Companions, and to refute those who reject it, and about the things to be guarded against which are necessary for them by law. I adduce the Book, the usage (*sunna*),<sup>1</sup> what is handed down and what is perceived by the intellect as proof that he who says that audition is absolutely forbidden must acknowledge that the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) did what is forbidden, looked at what is forbidden, and confirmed others in what is forbidden. If that flutters in anyone's mind, he is an infidel by general consent, and the paths of the favours and the indication are closed to him.

So when I saw the genuineness of his desire, I acceded to his request and obtained his favour by writing this book, after seeking guidance from the presence of the bounteous King ; and I have called it “ The lightning-flashes of indication concerning the refutation of those who declare audition forbidden in general.” No one must find fault with<sup>2</sup> what we have mentioned in this book without first of all understanding perfectly all that is in it ; and then he will find no occasion at all for finding fault. We ask Allāh, the Mighty, to cause benefit by it. Verily He is the Near, the Answerer.

Know (Allāh adorn your heart with the light of obedience and enfold you in the truth of the testimony<sup>3</sup> and the inter-

<sup>1</sup> *Hadīth* is a tradition handed down orally ; *sunna* is a usage, whether handed down orally or not. Cf. Goldziher, *Muh. Stud.*, ii, p. 11.

<sup>2</sup> This translation of the verb *awrada*, followed by *'ala*, which clearly suits the context, is not given in most dictionaries. I have found it only in Fagnan, p. 185.

<sup>3</sup> The declaration of faith, “ There is no god but Allāh. Muḥammad is Allāh's apostle.”

cession!)<sup>1</sup> that the audition of this party is a reference to the observation of strange secrets in the delicate poems which the *qawwāl*<sup>2</sup> recites while joined to the ecstasy which arises in the heart of the gnostic ('ārif) who works and the novice (*murīd*) who is perfect. It induces them to put off resistance, to be drawn to the presence of the One, the Powerful, and to ponder delicate things and secrets. And for the removal of these veils they have chosen audition with beautiful voices at most times, after fulfilling the things which are commanded,<sup>3</sup> simply because man's nature is inclined to the voice, inherently disposed to produce things which benefit him and repulse injurious things by means of it. Then when there arises in him increase of arrangements of notes and spiritual analogies which are called music, it<sup>4</sup> prefers them to everything else.<sup>5</sup> So when a person hears the analogies which pertain to notes which include the realities (*ma'āni*) which pertain to taste<sup>6</sup> and the truths which pertain to the Unity, the being inclines to all those, and every bodily member receives its portion separately.<sup>7</sup> The hearing [receives] the things of the unrestrained analogies; the sight, the analogies of the movements; the heart, the delicate things of the realities; and the intellect, the inner consciousness

<sup>1</sup> On the day of Judgment Muhammad will intercede for his followers.

<sup>2</sup> The man who chants. He may chant poetry, or passages of the Qur'ān.

<sup>3</sup> i.e. the prescribed daily prayers. Mystical practices do not absolve one from performing the regular religious duties. Cf. *Qūt al-qulūb*, iii, 66 f. On the danger of Christian mystics considering themselves superior to ordinary rites, cf. E. Underhill, *The Essentials of Mysticism*, 153.

<sup>4</sup> The subject is man's nature, as the verb is feminine referring to *tabī'a* (nature).

<sup>5</sup> Lit. "to what is other than it". The pron. suff. is masc., and so refers to *gaut* (voice).

<sup>6</sup> Al-Qushairī, *Risāla*, p. 46, says *dhaug* (taste) and *shurb* (drinking) are terms used by mystics with reference to the fruits of divine revelations. Mystic practices give them taste of the realities (*dhaug al-ma'āni*), and when they develop further, they attain to *shurb*. *Kashf al-mahjūb*, 392, says *dhaug* and *shurb* resemble one another, but the former refers to both pleasure and pain, while the latter refers only to pleasure.

<sup>7</sup> Cf. Al-Qushairī, *Risāla*, 186, where audition is said to provide something for every part of the body.

of the unrestrained analogies.<sup>1</sup> When the bodily members are united in affairs which are suitable, the law of contention is removed, and the law of mutual agreement appears. Contention pertains to darkness and mutual agreement to light, and when the darkness is removed and the light spread abroad, matters and verities are revealed which could not be reached by a thousand efforts.

Now such audition as this must have the time, the place, and the brethren.<sup>2</sup> As for the time, it is in periods when their hearts are serene and they desire the association to seek the good pleasure of their Beloved, to strip their outer nature of sensual characteristics, to free their inner nature from attachment to seeking degrees and obtaining stations (*maqāmāt*), and to unify their secret thoughts when the gifts come down. So when they associate together in such a time as this, the lights of the hearts of some are reflected to the hearts of others, and they increase by that association in light, manifestation, clearness, and gladness.

And as for the place, it is such as hermitages and monasteries ; and mosques are more fitting, since a mosque is built for the bodily worship<sup>3</sup> and the heart is created for gnosis and the appearance of Allāh (Exalted is He !) in it, as is said in the tradition (*khabar*), “ Neither my earth nor my heaven contains me, but the heart of my believing servant contains me ”<sup>4</sup> ; and it is the alighting-place of the divine lights. So when the possessor of a heart<sup>5</sup> is stirred in a mosque

<sup>1</sup> The various actions of mystics engaged in audition represent spiritual meanings. Those who engage in the practice attain to an understanding of the inner meaning of their actions.

<sup>2</sup> This saying is attributed to Al-Junaid (d. 297/910) . *Al-Luma'*, 272 ; Al-Qushairī, *Risāla*, 181. Cf. D. B. Macdonald, *JRAS.*, 1902, p. 1.

<sup>3</sup> The reference is to the prayers in which various postures are adopted and words are uttered. This differs from the more inward mystical states.

<sup>4</sup> Quoted in *Qūt al-qulūb*, i, 175 ; ii, 155, with two slight verbal differences, and with some additional words in the latter.

<sup>5</sup> The reference is to a spiritual faculty by which one receives knowledge of God. Cf. Nicholson, *Studies in Islamic Mysticism*, pp. 50, 113, 159, 236. Cf. also *JRAS.* (1901), 717 f.

on account of the increase of the light of his heart and the serenity of his soul, it is more worthy than the moving of the body of another in bodily prayer without the presence [of the light]. And there is no disagreement that if one enters a mosque and occupies himself with formal prayer while his heart is laden by the Whisperer,<sup>1</sup> by imaginations, and by things which the Lawgiver<sup>2</sup> forbade, but is striving to remove those hindrances from his heart, entering the mosque is not at all forbidden. Nay, more than that, the entrance into a mosque of a wicked wrongdoer who consumes what is forbidden is confirmed, while it is known by the related facts that his heart is occupied with thought about wrongful acts towards people and taking their goods, but he is formally occupied with prayer. His entrance is not forbidden, so how can it be forbidden to him who desires the purity of his soul, the cleansing of his heart, and the serenity of his spirit by listening to wonderful things in speech and comprehending delicate things in poems which uphold the establishment of his relationship to the angels and the cutting off of his relationship to the devils ? So when the people of serenity assemble in the place of worship desiring the union of the serenity of one another's hearts, the increase of their lights, and the making abundant of the serenity of their souls, their souls are strengthened by the light of that place, their states increase, and their essences become perfect, since every place which is built for worship has attached to it a spirit and a light from the unseen world and increases in sanctity and exaltation ; like a stable, for when it is made into a mosque, honour and exaltation are attached to it and it becomes a place for angels after having been a place of uncleanness and devils. So sitting in it when it is a mosque produces illumination of the inner nature (*al-bātin*). The Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, “ The mosque is the house of every pious person.”

<sup>1</sup> i.e. the Evil One. Cf. Qur. cxiv, 4.

<sup>2</sup> i.e. Muhammad.

And as for the brethren, they are in three divisions : (1) The brethren of the name, i.e. those who share in the name of faith. Allāh (Exalted is He !) said, “ The believers are only brethren.”<sup>1</sup> So it is not allowable to associate with these always ; nay, they should be associated with for a moment to give them what they may benefit by. (2) And the brethren of will and love, like the common people who help them with their property and persons to attain the ways of serenity. And even if these are not characterized by their characteristics, it is allowable to associate with them, for by the power of will and sincerity they acquire some of the lights of the hearts of the people of serenity, just as a slender candle acquires some of the heat of the sun. Then when they return to the common people, others benefit by them. (3) And the brethren of serenity, ecstasies (*mawājīd*),<sup>2</sup> gnosis, seclusion, taste, longing, and perfection. Now these are the brethren in truth.

So when the time, the place, and the brethren are united, audition is necessary for the people of knowledge (*‘irfān*), perfection, serenity, and union, just as the journeying of the ignorant to the learned is necessary to know the illumination of religion. And it is encouraged in the novices and allowable in the lovers,<sup>3</sup> in imitation of the people of serenity and perfection in their movements and quiescences. The Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, “ He who resembles a people is one of them ; and he who loves a people will be gathered along with them.”<sup>4</sup> And Allāh (Exalted is He !) said, “ O, you who believe, fear Allāh and be with the sincere ones ”<sup>5</sup> ; i.e. if you are not of their number, then associate with them. And He (Exalted is He !) said, “ Had Allāh known any good

<sup>1</sup> Qur. xl ix, 10.

<sup>2</sup> The dictionaries usually omit this form. Dozy, *Supplément*, explains that it is a plural of *wajd*.

<sup>3</sup> i.e. advanced mystics.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *Qūt al-qulūb*, iv, 213. Another version is given in ii, 181.

<sup>5</sup> Qur. ix, 120.

in them, He would have caused them to hear" <sup>1</sup>; i.e. truth, wisdom, warnings, and rebukes. Now His saying, "He would have caused them to hear" is too general to be Qur'ān, or Tradition, or poems, etc. And he (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, "Verily, in poetry there is wisdom." <sup>2</sup> So Allāh does not cause him in whom He knows no good to hear wisdom, gnosis, warnings, and rebukes, and at the same time He does not cause him to hear what is good and true in poems and audition. And if one finds no truth, wisdom, and benefits in a matter which he has rejected, then the rejection is against himself.<sup>3</sup>

In the rejection of listening to singing and listening to the playing of the tambourine and to beautiful voices there is opposition to the usage (*sunna*) ; and belief in prohibiting them is disbelief, and to turn away and refrain from them is wickedness. A tradition is handed down in Al-Bukhārī and Muslim, from Al-Rubaiyi', daughter of Mu'awwidh ibn 'Afrā', <sup>4</sup> she said : The Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) came and sat on my bed when some <sup>5</sup> little girls were with me playing the tambourine and bewailing those of my forbears who had been killed at the battle of Badr.<sup>6</sup> Then one of them said, "And among us is a prophet who knows what will happen to-morrow." Then he (Allāh bless him, etc.) said "Leave this, and say what you were saying." And the poetry was,

"Peoples fought at Barqa Suhmud with striking and thrusting and Indian swords."

Then one of them turned to what she had been saying, "And among us is a prophet who knows what will happen to-morrow." Now this tradition indicates that he (Allāh bless him, etc.) listened to the sound of the tambourine and singing and

<sup>1</sup> Qur. viii, 23.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Ahmad ibn Hanbal, *Musnad*, v, p. 125 ; Ibn Māja, *Adab*, 41 ; Abū Dāwud, *Adab*, 87.

<sup>3</sup> i.e. he really condemns himself by his attitude.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Al-Bukhārī, *Nikāh*, 48.

<sup>5</sup> B and P have the dual.

<sup>6</sup> The first battle which Muḥammad fought against the Metoans (A.H. 2).

poetry from the little girls, listening to whose voices when they are grown up is forbidden, unless there is some special reason <sup>1</sup>; yet he (Allāh bless him, etc.) was present listening to them. Now, *a fortiori*, listening to singing and the sound of the tambourine from a man is permitted; but what is one to say when he ordered the little girl to sing poetry and play the tambourine, since he said, “Say what you were saying”?

Now a matter pertains to necessity when it is freed from the contexts, like His saying (Exalted is He!), “Establish the prayer” <sup>2</sup>; or to encouragement, like His saying (Exalted is He!), “Write for them if you know any good in them” <sup>3</sup>; or to permission, like His saying (Exalted is He!), “And when you put off the *ihrām*, hunt.” <sup>4</sup> And here the necessity is possible, because he (Allāh bless him, etc.) ordered her by word of mouth to repeat what she was saying while he was listening to its purport. Now when he (Allāh bless him, etc.) asks a thing, listening to its purport, it is necessary to mention it; like His saying (Exalted is He!), “O, you who believe, respond to Allāh and the apostle when he summons you.” <sup>5</sup> And following him is necessary according to His saying (Exalted is He!), “Say, If you love Allāh, then follow me.” <sup>6</sup> And to ask one to express one’s meaning in words which consist of singing is not generally necessary; so it [i.e. singing] remains permissible, according to His saying (Exalted is He!), “You have had in Allāh’s apostle a good

<sup>1</sup> Women are secluded from men who are not very near relatives. An instance where there would be a special reason for listening to the voice of a woman who was not closely related, is when she comes with a case before a *qādī*.

<sup>2</sup> Qur. vi, 71.

<sup>3</sup> Qur. xxiv, 33.

<sup>4</sup> Qur. v, 3. The point of quoting these verses is that the first is a command which must be obeyed; the second recommends a course of action without making it obligatory; the third gives permission to do something without making it obligatory, or even recommending it.

<sup>5</sup> Qur. viii, 24.

<sup>6</sup> Qur. iii, 29.

example.”<sup>1</sup> And they have said in the fundamentals of jurisprudence that his bare action indicates permission according to Mālik,<sup>2</sup> encouragement according to Al-Shāfi’i<sup>3</sup> and necessity according to Ibn Suraij,<sup>4</sup> Abū Sa‘id al-Iṣṭakhrī<sup>5</sup> and Ibn Khairān.<sup>6</sup> He who holds to permission adduces as argument that what he (peace be upon him !)<sup>7</sup> did is neither disapproved, not prohibited. And the principle is, that there is no necessitating or encouragement without a context, so when there is none, permission is left. We say that what prevails in his action is necessitating and encouragement. He who holds to encouragement adduces as argument His saying (Exalted is He !), “ You have had in Allāh’s apostle a good example ; ” and that indicates preponderance. And the principle is, that there is no necessitating without a context, so when there is none, encouragement is left. And he who holds to necessitating adduces as argument His saying (Exalted is He !), “ Say, if you love Allāh, then follow me and Allāh will love you<sup>8</sup> ; ” “ And what the apostle has brought you, take it.”<sup>9</sup> And the Companions are agreed on the necessity of washing when the two places of circumcision meet together,<sup>10</sup> according to the saying of ‘Ā’isha, the mother of the faithful (Allāh be pleased with her !),

<sup>1</sup> Qur. xxxiii, 21.

<sup>2</sup> The famous jurisconsult of Al-Madina who gives his name to one of the four schools of canon law among Sunnis. d. 179 (795-6). Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, iii, 205 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Another jurisconsult who gives his name to one of the four schools. d. 204 (820). Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, iv, 252 ff.

<sup>4</sup> A great Shāfi’i teacher. d. 306 (918). Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, ii, 421.

<sup>5</sup> A celebrated Shāfi’i doctor, said to have been equal in calibre to Ibn Suraij. d. 328 (940). Cf. *Fihrist*, p. 300, where Iṣṭanḥarī appears by mistake ; Ibn Khall. (De Slane), i, 374 f.

<sup>6</sup> A Shāfi’i jurisconsult. He is one of those who felt it wrong to accept the office of *qādi*, and was imprisoned for his refusal when it was offered to him. (Cf. p. 115). d. 320 (932). Cf. Ibn Khall. (De Slane), i, 417 f.

<sup>7</sup> This phrase is used in the MSS. instead of the usual invocation of blessing on the Prophet.

<sup>8</sup> Qur. iii, 29.

<sup>9</sup> Qur. lix, 7.

<sup>10</sup> A euphemism for sexual intercourse. Cf. Lane, *Lexicon*, 704.

“Allāh’s apostle and I had intercourse, then we washed”<sup>1</sup>; while the Companions are agreed at the same time that there is no washing at the time of coming close together without an emission,<sup>2</sup> holding to his saying (Allāh bless him, etc.) “Water pertains only to water.”<sup>3</sup> In the same way, he (Allāh bless him, etc.) heard the sound of the tambourine and singing and asked it to be repeated; so according to what some of those who are versed in the fundamentals of jurisprudence say, it is necessary; according to what others say, it is encouraged; and according to what others say, it is permissible. But no one has held the view of prohibition.<sup>4</sup> So he who says that listening to singing and the sound of the tambourine is unlawful, has declared unlawful what is necessary, or encouraged, or permissible, and a mighty sin cleaves to him.

Al-Bukhārī and Muslim have related on the authority of ‘Ā’isha (Allāh be pleased with her!) that she said,<sup>5</sup> Abū Bakr (Allāh, exalted is He, be pleased with him!) came to see her when two little girls were with her playing the tambourine (and a version says they were singing what the Helpers<sup>6</sup> said to one another at the battle of Bu’āth<sup>7</sup>), and

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Muslim, i, 398; Ibn Māja, *Tayammum*, 21; i, p. 109.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Tayālī, 2185, 2449; Ibn Māja, i, p. 109n; Wensinck, *Handbook*, p. 86.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Muslim, i, 395. The commentary says some declare this tradition to be abrogated, and discusses different interpretations. Cf. Ahmad ibn Ḥanbal, iii, 29.

<sup>4</sup> In this paragraph the author makes it clear that he believes that what the Prophet did is either binding on his followers or to be recommended, though some say it merely indicates that an action is permissible. But, as he points out, these three are the only possible opinions. One cannot prohibit what the Prophet did.

<sup>5</sup> The tradition is obviously quoted from memory. Different forms of it are given in Al-Bukhārī, ‘Idain, 25; *Jihād*, 80; *Manāqib al-ansār*, 46; Muslim, ii, 299 f., but the form given in the text does not agree with any of them in detail.

<sup>6</sup> The people of Al-Madīna who welcomed Muḥammad on the occasion of the *Hijra*.

<sup>7</sup> A place near Al-Madīna where a battle was fought between the Aus and the Khazraj, tribes of Al-Madīna, some years before the *Hijra*. Cf. *Enc. of Islam*, i, 768.

the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) was covered up with his garment. Then Abū Bakr <sup>1</sup> (Allāh, exalted is He, be pleased with him !) rebuked them, but the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) uncovered his face and said, “Leave them alone, Abū Bakr, for they are feast days.” This tradition, by its clearness, indicates the permissibility of listening to the tambourine and singing and being present at them, and the refutation of those who reject them. And in it there is a demonstration of rebuke of him who rejects [audition] and a repulsing of him from rejection, because he (Allāh bless him, etc.) forbade the rejection of it. So he who says that listening to singing is forbidden, and playing the tambourine is forbidden, and being present at them is forbidden, is as though he said that the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) listened to what is forbidden, and prevented him who forbade what is forbidden. And he who believes that is an infidel by general consent.

If it is said that this is allowable on a feast day and no other, because he (Allāh bless him, etc.) restricted his permission to a feast day and on it, Ahmad ibn Ḥanbal <sup>2</sup> says, We hold that it is generally agreed that particularizing the cause does not prevent the law from being general, like His saying (Exalted is He !), “Verily those who disbelieve, it is the same to them whether you warn them or do not warn them ; they will not believe.” <sup>3</sup> It came down concerning Abū Jahl, <sup>4</sup> Abū Lahab, <sup>5</sup> ‘Utba, <sup>6</sup> Shaiba, <sup>7</sup> and ‘Abdallāh

<sup>1</sup> The father of ‘Ā’isha, Muhammad’s favourite wife, and later the first Caliph in Islām. d. 13 (634). Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, i, 80 ff.

<sup>2</sup> One of the jurisconsults who has given his name to a school of canon law among Sunnis. d. 241 (855). Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, i, 188 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Qur. ii, 5.

<sup>4</sup> An influential Makkan who opposed Muhammad. Killed at the battle of Badr. Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, i, 83.

<sup>5</sup> An uncle of Muhammad who was hostile to him and is denounced in the Qur’ān, *Sūra*, cxi. Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, i, 97 f.

<sup>6</sup> An opponent of Muhammad in Makka. Killed at the battle of Badr. Cf. Muir, *The Life of Mohammad* (ed. Weir), 60, 110, 228, etc.

<sup>7</sup> Another opponent who was killed at Badr. *Ibid.*, 110, 222 ff.

ibn Salūl,<sup>1</sup> but the ordinance is general concerning all infidels. And in the tradition which has been mentioned there is an indication that listening to the tambourine, singing, and poems is allowable on days of worship and other days in every legalized state in which are joy of the heart and well-being of the inner nature.

And in the *Musnad*<sup>2</sup> of Ahmād<sup>3</sup> [it is reported] that the Abyssinians were playing the tambourine in the presence of Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) and dancing and saying, "Muhammad is an upright servant." Then he (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, "What are they saying?" [The bystanders] said, They are saying, "Muhammad is an upright servant."<sup>4</sup> This tradition by its clearness indicates the permissibility of being present at dancing and the permissibility of listening to the sound of the tambourine and singing. So if anyone says that dancing is forbidden, and playing the tambourine and singing are forbidden, that is an acknowledgement from him that the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) was present at what is forbidden and confirmed others in what is forbidden. And if that flutters in anyone's mind, he is an infidel by general consent.

But if he who disapproves says, "If this is allowable in the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.), why do you say it is

<sup>1</sup> A chief of the *Khazraj* in Al-Madīna, who opposed Muhammad. His father was Ubāiy. Salūl was his mother. *Ibid.* See index. Al-Nasā'i, iv, 67 f., says that, in spite of the protests of 'Umar ibn al-Khaṭṭāb, Muhammad prayed at 'Abdallāh's funeral. But he was the last unbeliever for whom he prayed, as *Sūra* ix, 85 f., was revealed soon afterwards prohibiting any such thing.

<sup>2</sup> Collections of tradition are *musnad* or *muṣannaf*. In the former (generally earlier) type, they are arranged according to the Companion to whom they are traced; in the latter according to subject matter.

<sup>3</sup> Ahmād ibn Ḥanbāl.

<sup>4</sup> I have not discovered a form of the tradition which speaks of the Abyssinians playing the tambourine. Muslim, ii, 301, speaks of them *yazīnūnā*, which the commentary explains as meaning dancing. Cf. *JRAS*, 1902, p. 8. References to them playing in the mosque with spears in Muhammad's presence are frequent. Cf. Ahmād ibn Ḥanbāl, vi, 233, 242, etc.

allowable in us ? " we say, The proof of its permissibility is that he (Allāh bless him; etc.) was a lawgiver, and it is not allowable for a lawgiver to conceal any matter concerning which there is a legal ordinance, according to His saying (Exalted is He !), " Verily, those who conceal the proofs and guidance we have sent down after we have made it clear to men in the book, those Allāh curses, and the cursers curse them " <sup>1</sup>; and according to His saying (Exalted is He !), " And when Allāh made a covenant with those who were brought the Scripture [saying], You must certainly make it clear to men and not conceal it. . . ." <sup>2</sup> So had the performance of dancing, and being present at audition, singing, and playing the tambourine been unlawful, it would have been necessary for him, by the ordinance of this verse, to draw other people's attention to it. <sup>3</sup> And had that been lawful for him, but not for others, it would have been necessary for him to make it clear, as has come down in the tradition (*khabar*) that he (Allāh bless him, etc.) forbade them to combine [a series of fasts], then did it himself. When they questioned him, he said, " I am not like one of you ; I spend the night with my Lord, He giving me food and drink." <sup>4</sup> And since he was present at dancing, and listening to the tambourine and singing without prohibiting anyone from that, it indicates its absolute permissibility.

Now if he who disapproves says that dancing is sport (*h'b*) and sport is unlawful, because he (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, " *Dad* (diversion) has nothing to do with me, and I have nothing to do with *dad*," <sup>5</sup> and *dad* is sport, we say, This tradition applies particularly to forbidden sport, like backgammon, gambling, and such like, because it has come down in Al-Bukhārī from 'A'isha (Allāh be pleased with her !)

<sup>1</sup> Qur. ii, 154.

<sup>2</sup> Qur. iii, 184.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Al-Bukhārī, *Tauhīd*, 46 ; Ahmad ibn Hanbal, vi, 241, 266.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Al-Bukhārī, *Šaum*, 49, etc. ; Ahmad ibn Hanbal, ii, 237.

<sup>5</sup> *Tāj al-'Arūs*, ii, 346, and *Lisān al-'arab*, xviii, 277, give this tradition with the clauses inverted. Cf. Lane, *Lexicon*, 862.

as follows, The Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) was standing at the door of my house while the Abyssinians were playing with their spears in the mosque and I was looking at their play.<sup>1</sup> So if playing in the mosque is allowable in the presence of the Lawgiver, then, *a fortiori*, [it is allowable] in others. Therefore if anyone says that sport is absolutely unlawful, that is an acknowledgment on his part that the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) looked at what is unlawful and confirmed what is unlawful. And if that flutters in anyone's thought, he is an infidel by general consent.

And if he who disapproves says, It has come down in the tradition that "there is no sport except in three things, in shooting, and the horse, and a man's disporting himself with his wife",<sup>2</sup> we say, This is a restriction of the particular owing to being occupied with it, and that does not prove the prohibition of other things, as Allāh (Exalted is He!) said, "You are only a warner."<sup>3</sup> The word "only" is for restriction, and in it there is an indication that giving warning applies particularly to you because you are the seal of the prophets.<sup>4</sup> But that does not give the full sense of restriction, since he (Allāh bless him, etc.) was a conveyor of good news, an announcer, etc. ; so it is the same here. He has mentioned these three with the restriction, either because there is in them what causes the completeness of the victory of religion in shooting and the horse, or mutual love and affection to establish love between husband and wife ; and the child who arrives among people who love one another has an agreeable

<sup>1</sup> Al-Bukhārī, *Salāt*, 69.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Abū Dāwud, *Jihād*, 23 ; *JRAS.* (1901), 247, where Al-Ghazālī comments on this tradition.

<sup>3</sup> Qur. xiii, 8.

<sup>4</sup> In Qur. xxxiii, 40, Muḥammad is called the "seal of the prophets", indicating that there will be no prophet after him. Al-Bukhārī, *Manāqib*, 18, represents Muḥammad as saying that his relationship to other prophets may be illustrated by a house in which one brick has been omitted. People who admire the house ask why the brick is missing. Muḥammad is like the brick which completes the building.

character, while the child who comes among people who are at variance has a bad character.

Allāh (Exalted is He!) said, "They who hear the word and follow the best of it, those are they whom Allāh guides, and those are the possessors of intelligence."<sup>1</sup> Now "the word" is too general to be Qur'ān, or tradition, or the story of the condition of the upright, or listening to poems.<sup>2</sup> Then Allāh praised him who listens to the word and follows the best of it, as having guidance and intelligence. It necessarily follows from this that if any do not listen to "the word" of singing which is understood in the general meaning of his saying, "who hear the word" which includes wisdom with a beautiful voice, Allāh does not guide them or give them intelligence. And he who is astray from guidance is erring, since error is the opposite of guidance; and he who is erring belongs to the people of hell, since He made error a characteristic of the Christians as He (Exalted is he!) said about them, "They have erred before and led many astray."<sup>3</sup> So it necessarily follows from this that he who does not hear "the word" of singing which is understood in the general meaning of His saying "who hear the word", which retains its widest sense and has nothing to particularize it respecting singing with the voice, is erring. And what are we to say when the three are combined in the presence of Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) when a woman said, "O apostle of Allāh, I have made a vow to play the tambourine in your presence"? Then he (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, "If you have made a vow, play [it]." Then she played and sang, "The full moon has risen upon us from the passes of al-Wadā' ;

We must give thanks as long as one prays to Allāh."<sup>4</sup>

Now, by the ordinance of this tradition, he (Allāh bless

<sup>1</sup> Qur. xxxix, 19.

<sup>2</sup> i.e. "the word" cannot be restricted to any one class of subject.

<sup>3</sup> Qur. v, 81.

<sup>4</sup> Al-Ghazālī, *JRAS.* (1901), 224, 246, speaks of this verse being sung by women on another occasion.

him, etc.) has listened to “ the word ” of the woman with the voice, and to singing and the playing of the tambourine. So if anyone says that being present at audition, playing the tambourine, and dancing is unlawful, it is as though he said that the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) did what is unlawful and listened to what is unlawful. And if that flutters in anyone’s thought, he is an infidel by general consent. And there is no dispute that a vow about something unlawful is not binding.<sup>1</sup>

Among the things which strengthen the permissibility of dancing is what is mentioned in the *musnad* of Aḥmad ibn Ḥanbal<sup>2</sup> on the authority of ‘Alī<sup>3</sup> (Allāh honour his face!) that he said, I and Ja‘far<sup>4</sup> and Zaid<sup>5</sup> came to the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) and he said to Zaid, “ You are my client ”; then he hopped. And he said to Ja‘far, “ You resemble my nature and character ”. He said, Then he hopped. Thereafter he said to me, “ You pertain to me ”; then I hopped. Hopping is a particular form of dancing, and the general is a part of the particular, i.e. it enters into it. So if a kind of dancing is allowable, it is all allowable.<sup>6</sup>

Then if he who disapproves says, “ We admit the permissibility of hopping, but why do you say that doing much of

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Al-Bukhārī, *Al-aimān wa'l-nudhūr*, 28, 31, “ If one makes a vow to obey Allāh, let him obey Him ; but if one makes a vow to disobey Allāh, let him not disobey Him.” Ibn al-‘Arabī, *Futūhāt*, ii, 368, says that the woman mentioned in the text was allowed to play the tambourine simply because she had made a vow. He adds that, though playing the tambourine is lawful, the best people avoid such practices. His school does not condemn singing because no prohibition has been laid down, but does not look on it with favour.

<sup>2</sup> i, 108. Cf. Al-Ghazālī’s remarks on this tradition, *JRAS*. (1902), 8 f.

<sup>3</sup> ‘Alī ibn abī Tālib, cousin of Muḥammad and fourth Caliph. d. 40/661. Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, i, 283 ff.

<sup>4</sup> Brother of ‘Alī and one of Muḥammad’s earliest converts. d. 8/629. Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, i, 993.

<sup>5</sup> Zaid ibn Ḥāritha, Muḥammad’s adopted son. He has the distinction of being mentioned by name in the Qur’ān (xxxiii, 37). d. 8/629. Both Ja‘far and he were killed at the battle of Mu’ta. Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, iv, 1194.

<sup>6</sup> This seems rather a doubtful argument, but it is qualified by what follows.

it is permissible ? " we say, What proves the permissibility of doing much of it is that, when part of a thing is permissible and no prohibition is reported concerning the remainder, the whole remains permissible ; since, had the other part been unlawful, it would have been necessary for him to make it clear, according to His saying (Exalted is He !), " And we have sent down the reminder to you, that you may make clear to men. . . ." <sup>1</sup> So had doing much of it been unlawful, it would have been necessary for him to make it clear ; but since he did not prohibit them from that, it proves its permissibility.

Now these matters which we have mentioned are connected with the Book and the usage (*sunna*). And as to what is connected with that which is handed down, there is what Abū Tālib al-Makkī,<sup>2</sup> the author of *Qūt al-qulūb*, who is an authority among the people of Islām, related, that some of the Companions, like Ḥāritha<sup>3</sup> and ‘Abdallāh ibn Ja‘far<sup>4</sup> and others of the people of Makka were persevering in audition up to " our time ", referring to the time of Abū Tālib himself.<sup>5</sup> And Al-Māwardī<sup>6</sup> has mentioned in *Al-hāwī al-kabīr* something to this effect, that one of the Companions heard that ‘Abdallāh ibn Ja‘far was devoted to audition and squandering his time on it ; so Mu‘āwiya<sup>7</sup> said to ‘Amr ibn al-‘Āṣ,<sup>8</sup> " Come and

<sup>1</sup> Qur. xvi, 46.

<sup>2</sup> d. 386 (996). Cf. Sarkis, *Dictionnaire*, 320 f.

<sup>3</sup> He may be Ḥāritha ibn Badr who, though of Tamīm, was enrolled as a member of Quraish. Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, ii, 269.

<sup>4</sup> Son of Ja‘far, the brother of ‘Alī (see p. 84). d. 80 (699–700). Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, i, 23.

<sup>5</sup> The quotation from *Qūt al-qulūb* is clearly made from memory. iii, 91, has a passage fairly similar to that given in the text : " The people of Al-Hijāz continue to listen to audition on the most excellent days of the year, i.e. the days on which Allāh ordered His servants to remember Him, the *tashrīq* days, from the time of ‘Atā’ ibn abi Rabāh to the present day." Further on ‘Abdallāh ibn Ja‘far is mentioned, but not Ḥāritha.

<sup>6</sup> d. 450 (1058). Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, iii, 416. *Al-hāwī al-kabīr fi'l-furū'* is a large work still unedited.

<sup>7</sup> The first Umayyad Caliph. d. 60 (680). Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, iii, 617 ff.

<sup>8</sup> The conqueror of Egypt. d. ca. 42 (663). Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, i, 334 f.

let us go to him, for his passion has got the better of his self-respect." Then they came to him and knocked at his door, and he ordered his [singing-]girls to be quiet, and gave them permission to enter. Then when he (i.e. Mu'āwiya) had sat down, he said, "O Abdallāh, order them to return to what they were engaged in." So they began to sing, and Mu'āwiya was moving his head and shaking his feet above the couch. Then 'Amr ibn al-Āṣ said, "Inasmuch as you chide it, make good your escape from it." He said, "Silence, 'Amr, verily the noble one is emotional."<sup>1</sup> Now he was one of the great ones of the Companions and the writer of the inspiration of Allāh's apostle<sup>2</sup> (Allāh bless him, etc.); and following the Companions necessarily produces guidance, since the Prophet (Allāh, bless him, etc.), said, "My Companions are like the stars; whichever of them you copy, you will be guided." So he who refuses to copy them rejects guidance for himself.

Now if he who rejects what is implied in the soundness of this saying which is handed down concerning the Companions says "I swear allegiance to<sup>3</sup> some of the Companions in all aspects except in audition," we say, This produces no benefit, because then his state with reference to the Companions will be like Abū Lahab's state with reference to the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.), for he may say, "I am a believer in what you say, Muḥammad, yet in all that you say I do not believe; but I declare you to be true in this." It will be said to him, "This does not profit you, because belief which is recognized is belief in all that the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) brought, not in part of it."<sup>4</sup> Similar is the position of him who follows the Companions in some of

<sup>1</sup> For stories of Mu'āwiya and 'Abdallāh ibn Ja'far cf. *Al-'iqd al-farīd*, iv, 98 f. The last story there has a passage like the end of the story given above.

<sup>2</sup> Mu'āwiya was employed by the Prophet as a secretary.

<sup>3</sup> ? Follow.

<sup>4</sup> *Qūt al-qulūb*, ii, 38, remarks that Muḥammad is the only one whose every word is to be accepted.

the states, with the exception of audition ; for it will not profit him.

But if he who disapproves says, “Abū Ḥanīfa,<sup>1</sup> or the *shaikh* Abū'l-Bayān<sup>2</sup> prohibited audition, and I follow him in that,” we say, He must first of all interpret Abū Ḥanīfa’s saying to the effect that that about which the aforementioned *shaikh* established its blessed wording was against listening to forbidden instruments and listening to singing which leads astray and causes diversion, not to singing absolutely ; otherwise certain things which ought to be guarded against apply to him.

I. One of them is either unbelief or profligacy, because the traditions, with reference to their coming down to us, are of three kinds, of which one is a tradition which is authenticated by a continuous chain of evidence both in root and in branch,<sup>3</sup> like the tradition of the Qur’ān, and prayer, and almsgiving, for he who denies it is an infidel. The second are traditions which come originally from individuals and are well-known in branch,<sup>4</sup> like the traditions of Al-Bukhārī and Muslim,<sup>5</sup> and he who rejects such is a profligate. The third is a tradition which has one line of authorities both in root and branch,<sup>6</sup> like the tradition, “I pertain to Allāh

<sup>1</sup> One of the four jurisconsults after whom a Sunnī school of canon law is named. d. 150 (767). Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, i, 90 f.

<sup>2</sup> I have found no reference to anyone of this name. One of the expounders of Abū Ḥanīfa’s teaching is intended.

<sup>3</sup> There is no break in the chain of authorities at any point, and such information is not dependent on one line of transmission.

<sup>4</sup> Those who hand down traditions from the Companions must be well-known authorities who are recognized as such. There should also be more than one line of transmission.

<sup>5</sup> The collections of Al-Bukhārī (d. 256/870) and Muslim (d. 261/875), called *Al-Ṣahīḥān*, are generally recognized as the two most authoritative collections of tradition. Cf. *Journal Asiatique*, série ix, vol. 16 (1900), pp. 483 ff. ; Al-Nisābūrī, *Madkhal*, p. 7, where it is said that each Companion in these traditions has two authorities who hand down his traditions, and they also have two.

<sup>6</sup> When there is only one line of transmission, traditions are not so authoritative. Al-Nisābūrī (ibid., 9 f.) gives this type as the second grade

and the believers pertain to me," etc. There is nothing against him who denies it. Now the traditions we have mentioned about the lawfulness of audition and the permissibility of listening to the sound of the tambourine, singing, and poems, come originally from individuals and are well known in branch ; so if anyone denies these traditions, he is a profligate. And if he lays more weight on what is handed down concerning it on the authority of *Abū Ḥanifa*, or someone else than on the word and action of the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) in that he believes that the citation concerning the absolute prohibition of audition is sound and true, while the action and word of the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) are unsound and untrue, he is an infidel by general consent.

II. The second of them is that deviation in the interpretation applies to him. That means that he interprets many of the sound traditions like the saying of the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) to the Arab when he prayed without completing his bowing and his prostration, "Pray, for you have not prayed."<sup>1</sup> The lawgiver was guarding prayer in its entirety, but he applies it to defective prayer, while it would have been defective only if he had said "Pray" and nothing more.<sup>2</sup> Similar is his saying, "When water reaches [the amount of] two vessels, it does not bear foulness."<sup>3</sup> It is interpreted as meaning that it cannot bear foulness, which is a departure from what is to be understood. One which is like it is, "When in authority. He does not follow *Majd al-Dīn* in his rather unusual statement that the *Qur'ān* is the first grade. Normally it is treated as different altogether from tradition ; but *Majd al-Dīn* is looking at it from the point of view of its transmission.

<sup>1</sup> *Al-Bukhārī*, *Adhān*, 122.

<sup>2</sup> The argument seems to be that the man had actually gone through the whole ritual, omitting nothing ; but he had not performed the *rukū'*, and the *sujūd* in quite the proper manner. The tradition quoted in n. 1 explains how they should be done. If the Prophet had said simply "Pray", it would have indicated that the man had omitted something, and so his prayer would not be accepted. But he added "for you have not prayed" to show the man that although he had gone through the whole ritual, there was something wrong.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *Al-Tayālīsī*, 1954 ; *Aḥmad ibn Ḥanbal*, ii, 12, 38.

water reaches [the amount of] a mighty sea, it does not bear foulness." Similarly he said here, "that is like it." But if he interprets the latter in the same way as the former, he disagrees completely with the general consensus. A similar saying of the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) is, "Every marriage which does not take place with a guardian and two just witnesses is debauchery, debauchery, debauchery."<sup>2</sup> It is interpreted as applying to a young girl and a slave woman.<sup>3</sup> Also his saying (Allāh bless him, etc.), "The widow has more right over herself,"<sup>4</sup> is interpreted as applying to a free, adult woman. And other traditions [might be quoted]. Now if it is permissible to interpret traditions related to the Prophet in a manner with which no other *mujtahid*<sup>4</sup> would agree, then what Abū Ḥanīfa said, or the citation concerning it, if it is established as prohibiting singing and audition, must, *a fortiori*, be interpreted as applying to listening to depravity and licentiousness.

III. The third is that the removal of Abū Ḥanīfa (Allāh be pleased with him!) from the category of the saints and the placing of him in the category of those who reject the people of truth applies to him. That is because Allāh's perfect saints,<sup>5</sup> the possessors of the stations,<sup>6</sup> listened to audition and were stirred by it, as is mentioned in their biographies.

<sup>1</sup> Traditions similar to this are to be found in Al-Tayālī, 1463, and Abīmad ibn Ḥanbal, vi, 47, 66. *Bātil* (invalid) is used instead of *safāb* (debauchery), and there is no reference to the two witnesses.

<sup>2</sup> Al-Tirmidhī, i, p. 206, disagrees with this, saying that a *walī* is necessary for every marriage.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Abū Dāwud, *Nikāh*, 25; Al-Tirmidhī, i; 206; Mālik, *Muwaṭṭa'*, p. 197. Al-Tirmidhī adds the explanation that, although a woman who has been married previously has the right to decide with regard to another marriage, she cannot be legally married without a *walī*.

<sup>4</sup> One who has a right to form a legal judgment which others should follow. Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, ii, 448 f.

<sup>5</sup> Lit. "friends". Cf. Al-Niffarī, *Mawāqif*, 61, where it is said that the saint gets this name because his heart is a friend of Allāh and nothing else. "It is my temple in which I speak."

<sup>6</sup> Stages on the mystic way through which the mystic must pass. Cf. Al-Qushairī, *Risāla*, 37 f; *Kashf al-mahjūb*, 180 ff., 370 f.

So should they say that Abū Ḥanīfa rejected all audition, that would be a rejection of the saints. But Abū Ḥanīfa was one of the saints, and a saint does not reject another saint like himself, for he would then be rejecting himself. Now he who rejects himself is seeking perfection, not perfect, while the *mujtahid* is perfect. So should Abū Ḥanīfa's saying be established as prohibiting audition, that would be interpreted as listening to instruments of diversion,<sup>1</sup> depravity, licentiousness, and falsehood, and no one disputes about that.

IV. The fourth of them is that abandoning what reliability stipulates regarding its soundness and choosing what that does not stipulate about it applies to him. That is because the taking of jurisprudence from books of jurisprudence does not stipulate reliability in the copyist, or in him who hands it down. Now the copyist may possibly add or omit something in the first or second copy, in which case reliance cannot be resolutely placed on that, contrary to the traditions connected with the Prophet, for reliability is stipulated concerning the soundness of their transmission.<sup>2</sup> And he who abandons a saying which stipulates reliability concerning its soundness and chooses a saying which does not stipulate reliability concerning its soundness, is a fool, for the fool is he who does not choose the best for his religious and secular affairs, and no attention is paid to what a fool says.

Then if he who disapproves says, "These traditions which come down concerning it come from individuals and do not give a convincing argument, so we do not act according to them," we say, You must not act according to any tradition which comes from individuals which they adduce as proof to verify the laws of jurisprudence; for if they do not act according to those traditions which we have mentioned, they

<sup>1</sup> *Malāḥī*. These refer here to such musical instruments as are condemned by religious people.

<sup>2</sup> Numerous regulations have been drawn up to ensure reliable transmission of traditions. Cf. *Journal Asiatique*, série ix, vol. 17 (1901), pp. 195 ff., 524 ff.; vol. 18 (1901), pp. 61 ff.

must not act according to traditions which come from individuals concerning jurisprudence ; in which case all the laws of jurisprudence would be made invalid to them.<sup>1</sup>

And they adduce as argument His saying (Exalted is He !) " Their prayer at the House was only *mukā'* and *taṣdiya*,"<sup>2</sup> and *mukā'* is whistling, and *taṣdiya* is striking one palm on another from which a sound issues. We say, This argument is not congruous, because He forbade them from whistling and hand-clapping at the House, and it does not necessarily follow from the prevention of something in a sacred state that it is to be prevented in positions which are different from that. On this account, a woman may strike the palm of one hand on the back of the other during the prayer when some trouble comes upon her, but it is not permissible in any other circumstances.<sup>3</sup> And since the House is honourable and the circling round it is prayer, He prevented them from that. And further, He said, " Their prayer was only . . .", but did not say, " Their audition was only. . . ." So it is not allowable to deduce from the prevention of hand-clapping round the House its prevention in all places.

And they adduce as argument also His saying (Exalted is He !), " Among men are those who buy sportive talk to lead astray from Allāh's way without knowledge,"<sup>4</sup> and " sportive talk " is singing. We say, It is to be understood from His saying " sportive talk " that it is permissible to listen to true talk, whether it be Qur'ān, poetry, or something

<sup>1</sup> There are not traditions of the fullest degree of authority on all subjects ; so the argument is that, if only traditions of the highest grade are to be applied to the subject of audition, the same principle should hold good for all matters dealt with by the law of Islām. But the author exaggerates, for all the laws would not be invalidated if only thoroughly reliable traditions were accepted ; but some would.

<sup>2</sup> Qur. viii, 35. " The House " is the Ka'ba.

<sup>3</sup> Abū Dāwud, *Šalāt*, 166 (cf. Al-Nasā'i, viii, 243 f.) says that when anything happens to a man during prayer, he should say, " Praise be to Allāh." A woman should clap her hands. This is explained as striking the palm of the left hand with two fingers of the right.

<sup>4</sup> Qur. xxxi, 5.

else ; and we have mentioned sound traditions about the permissibility of listening to the sound of the tambourine, singing, and poetry. A tradition has come down which says, " In poetry there is wisdom " <sup>1</sup> ; and this text indicates that " sportive talk " applies particularly to audition which leads astray and diverts from truth and worship, and what removes the worshipper far from Allāh (Exalted is He !) ; now what is not like that remains permissible.<sup>2</sup> And further, if a text comes down which gives a general sense, one must first seek something which particularizes it, and if he finds it, he must act upon it ; otherwise he must interpret it in a general sense. Take for example the tradition, " Scatter dust in the faces of the panegyrists." <sup>3</sup> Then it has come down that the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) was praised and eulogized. An example is the saying of Ka'b ibn Zuhair <sup>4</sup> (Allāh be pleased with him !),

" Su'ād has gone and my heart to-day is infatuated,  
Enslaved by her trace, unransomed, enchanted " ;  
until he reached in recitation his saying,

" [I am informed] that Allāh's apostle has threatened me,  
but forgiveness is hoped for with Allāh's apostle."

Then Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) cast his striped mantle to him. So it is necessary to apply his saying, " Scatter dust in the faces of the panegyrists," to praise of falsehood and depravity, and to the depraved person. Similarly here it is necessary to apply " sportive talk " to falsehood, depravity, and instruments of diversion ; and what does not come into that category is assuredly permissible.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. p. 75, n. 2.

<sup>2</sup> For Ibn abi'l-Dunyā's treatment of this passage cf. p. 24.

<sup>3</sup> Abū Dāwud, *Adab*, 9 ; Ahmad ibn Hanbal, vi, 5.

<sup>4</sup> Son of Zuhair, author of one of the *Mu'allaqāt*. He came to make submission to Muhammad in the year 9 (630/1), and recited in his honour his famous poem, *Bānat Su'ād*, from which the verses quoted above are taken. Cf. *Enc. of Islam*, ii, 584. This poem is included in Nöldeke, *Delectus*, 110 ff.

Then if he who disapproves says, "The audition of the *faqīrs*<sup>1</sup> is allowable according to the conditions you have mentioned, but the audition of the common people is unlawful," we say, No one has a right to declare anything lawful or unlawful in the law as long as the lawgiver has laid down no statute about it, according to what has come down in the tradition, "The lawful is clear and the unlawful is clear, and between them there are doubtful matters."<sup>2</sup> And Allāh (Exalted is He!) said, "And do not say of the falsehood which your tongues describe, 'This is lawful and this is unlawful,' to invent falsehood against Allāh."<sup>3</sup> So if anyone says that audition is absolutely unlawful, he has declared forbidden in the law something about which no statute has come down, since no statute forbidding audition and dancing has come down in the Book of Allāh (Exalted is He!), or in the usage of Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.), or in the words of the Companions (Allāh be pleased with them!). And he who declares to be forbidden in the law anything which is not in it, has invented something against Allāh, and he who invents anything against Allāh is an infidel by general agreement. Further, regarding the audition and dancing of the common people, their recreations in gardens compare with the audition and dancing of the Abyssinians in the presence of Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.),<sup>4</sup> and there is no dispute about the permissibility of that; and their movements in audition are similar. And further, [it is said] in the tradition, "He who resembles a people is one of them."<sup>5</sup> And the companions of the pure truth preceded people in it.<sup>6</sup> And the saints of Allāh (Exalted is He!), like Al-Junaid<sup>7</sup> and others, were moved in audition,

<sup>1</sup> Lit. "poor men". This name is applied to the mystics. Cf. *Kashf al-mahjūb*, 58 f.

<sup>2</sup> Al-Bukhārī, *Imān*, 39; *Buyū'*, 2; Abū Dāwud, *Buyū'*, 3; Al-Tirmidhī, i, 227.

<sup>3</sup> Qur. xvi, 117.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. p. 80.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. p. 74.

<sup>6</sup> i.e. people of recognized piety have engaged in audition in earlier times.

<sup>7</sup> A celebrated mystic. d. 297 (910). Cf. *Enc. of Islām*,<sup>8</sup> i, 1063.

as is related about them in Al-Qushairī's *Risāla*<sup>1</sup> and in other books. So if one of the common people is moved in audition, in resemblance to them, seeking some of their inheritance, he is like them. And it has come down in the tradition, "The associate of these people is not made miserable by them."<sup>2</sup>

Then if he who disapproves says, "When anyone goes into an ecstasy in audition for love of a human being or his form, it is unlawful," we say, There has come down in the tradition, "By Him in whose hand is my soul, you will not enter Paradise till you believe, and you will not believe till you love one another. Shall I not guide you to a thing by doing which you will love one another? Increase the salutation among yourselves."<sup>3</sup> And there is a reading "you are guided" (instead of "you love one another"). And there is also in the tradition, "On the Day of Resurrection Allāh (Exalted is He!) will call, 'Where are those who love one another for my glory?' Then they will have pulpits of light, and the prophets and martyrs will envy them."<sup>4</sup> So when two people love one another for the sake of Allāh (Exalted is He!) and one of them is moved on account of love for the other for the sake of Allāh (Exalted is He!), it is allowable, since he does not acknowledge anything vain.<sup>5</sup>

Then if he who disapproves says, "The common person is moved only by sport and vanity, and this kind of sport is unlawful," we say, It has come down in the tradition, "When any words come forth from your brother, do not give them an evil interpretation when you can find a good

<sup>1</sup> An important treatise on mysticism. There is a chapter on audition (pp. 178-186). Al-Qushairī d. 465 (1072). Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, ii, 1160.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Al-Bukhārī, *Da'wāt*, 67. Al-Sarrāj allows the common people to practise audition provided no instruments which have evil associations are used. Cf. *Al-Luma'*, 277.

<sup>3</sup> Muslim, i, 143; Al-Tirmidhī, *Isti'dhān*, 1; Abū Dāwud, *Adab*, 131; Ibn Māja, *Adab*, 11.

<sup>4</sup> Al-Tirmidhī, ii, 63. Cf. also Ahmad ibn Ḥanbal, v, 328.

<sup>5</sup> There is a tradition given by Abū Dāwud (*Adab*, 113), which says: "If a man loves his brother, let him tell him he loves him."

interpretation for them." So when we see a unitarian believer, be he one of the common people or someone else, moved in audition without acknowledging anything vain, it is necessary to treat his action as genuine. But if what is suspected is as was suspected, that is the state of affairs<sup>1</sup>; otherwise, the matter of his faith pertains to Allāh (Exalted is He!), not to the one who looks at him. And further, as the schools are free, and every *mujtahid* chooses what prevails over his opinion after his consideration of the texts, and every *mujtahid* has a following, it is not fitting for anyone to favour one man absolutely. So according to this, audition is altogether permissible among the adherents of the Shāfi'i school,<sup>2</sup> so there is no blame on any of their followers who practise it; just as there is no retribution taken from him who commits fornication with a woman servant, according to Abū Ḥanīfa, so there is no blame on any of his followers who do that.<sup>3</sup> But should a Shāfi'i judge know of it, he would punish him, and not pay any attention to his (Abū Ḥanīfa's) decision (*ijtihād*) on account of how the Book deals with that, where Allāh (Exalted is He!) says, "The fornicatress and the fornicator, give each of them a hundred lashes"<sup>4</sup>; and only one like him opposes the text.<sup>5</sup> And the Ḥanafī has no text for his prohibition [of audition] from the Book, or the usage, or the general agreement of the people; so their rejection of that is a rejection of the lawgiver, as we have declared, and the same applies to all the schools.

<sup>1</sup> If he is clearly in the wrong, one may take him to task.

<sup>2</sup> Al-Qushairī, *Risāla*, 179, says that although Al-Shāfi'i does not prohibit audition, he considers it objectionable. *Minhāj*, 515, says the only song to which one may listen is that of the camel drivers. All other unaccompanied singing is disapproved. Even a tambourine is allowable only at a marriage, a circumcision, or a festival. Cf. Farmer, *History*, p. 29.

<sup>3</sup> The reference is to a servant employed in one's household. Cf. *Hidāya*, ii, 20 f. For Shāfi'i rulings on the subject cf. *Minhāj*, 439.

<sup>4</sup> Qur. xxiv, 2.

<sup>5</sup> The Ḥanafī school is here declared to go against the clear teaching of the Qur'ān.

Then if he who disapproves says, “ We grant the permissibility of playing the tambourine which has no metal plates (*sunūj*), for the tambourine of the Arabs was like that, but we do not admit the permissibility of playing the tambourine with the metal plates,” we say, The permissibility of playing the tambourine which has no metal plates has been established by the traditions we have mentioned, and nothing has come down regarding the metal plates, either by way of prohibition or of disapproval, so it remains permissible. For if a permissible thing which has not been heard of is joined to a permissible thing which is heard of, the whole is permissible provided no context points to the combination of them being unlawful <sup>1</sup>; like the marriage of two sisters, for marrying each one of them separately is permissible, but having them both as wives at the same time is unlawful.<sup>2</sup>

As for the Persian flute (*qāṣab*), nothing has come down about it, so it remains permissible. But as for the reed-pipe (*mizmār*), it is forbidden to listen to it, on account of what has come down in the tradition that he (Allāh bless him, etc.) heard the sound of the *mizmār* and stopped his ears.<sup>3</sup>

And further, hostility to Allāh (Exalted is He !) applies to him who disapproves of dancing, audition, playing the tambourine, and listening to singing, and he who fights against Allāh (Exalted is He !) is an infidel by general consent. That is because there has come down in the sound tradition, “ He who is hostile to a saint of mine has come forth against me in warfare.” <sup>4</sup> There is no disagreement among the *mujtahids* about the existence of saints among them, and the people of all times are agreed about the soundness of the sainthood

<sup>1</sup> For a similar argument in another connection cf. *JRAS.*, 1901, p. 215.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Minhāj*, 292; *Hidāya*, i, 78 ff. In the latter it is held that one cannot marry a wife's sister at any time. Mālik, *Muwaṭṭa'*, 203, allows marriage with a wife's sister after the wife's death or divorce.

<sup>3</sup> Abū Dāwud, *Adab*, 52. Cf. p. 30, n. 1.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Ibn Māja, *Fitan*, 16.

of Al-Junaid,<sup>2</sup> Al-Shibli,<sup>3</sup> Ma'rūf al-Karkhī,<sup>4</sup> 'Abdallāh ibn Khafīf,<sup>5</sup> and others of those who are mentioned in *Tadhkira al-auliya'*,<sup>6</sup> etc. And it is verified concerning them in their biographies that they went into ecstasies in audition and danced to destroy from their hearts what was apart from Allāh.<sup>7</sup> So he who declares audition to be absolutely unlawful is as though he said these saints did what is unlawful; and he who attributes to them dealings with what is unlawful is hostile to them in word, deed, and belief; and he who is hostile to them has come forth against the Truth (Exalted is He!); and he who comes forth against the Truth (Exalted is He!) is an infidel by general consent, and "has brought down on himself anger from Allāh, and his resort is Jahannam, and evil is the journey".<sup>8</sup>

It is then established from the declarations, proofs, and traditions we have mentioned that audition is absolutely permissible, and that he who disapproves of it is either an infidel, or a profligate. And this is rather a matter of approval regarding the novices,<sup>9</sup> necessary regarding the saints of

<sup>1</sup> See p. 93, n. 7. <sup>2</sup> d. 334 (945). Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, iv, 360 f.

<sup>3</sup> d. 200 (815-6). Cf. *Enc. of Islām*, iii, 307.

<sup>4</sup> d. 372 (982). Cf. *Kashf al-mahjūb*, 158, 247 ff.

<sup>5</sup> The only book of this name with which I am familiar is a Persian work by 'Attār (d. 627/1230). As Majd al-Din died in 520 (1126), one can only conclude that, if this is the book referred to, the passage is not a part of Majd al-Din's original work. The saints mentioned are all dealt with in 'Attār's work. If this passage is part of Majd al-Din's work, one must assume that he is either referring to some unknown book, or using the phrase in a general sense with reference to biographies of saints. But it is possible that the whole paragraph has been added by a later hand, as it is in the style of pp. 87-90, and so does not seem in place here. Against this it may be said that the last sentence makes a very effective finish to this section of the tractate.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. Nicholson, *Studies*, 58, where Abū Sa'id ibn abi'l-Khair is quoted as saying that dancing dissipates lust in young men. See also p. 237.

<sup>7</sup> Qur. viii, 16.

<sup>8</sup> Frequently those who approve of audition feel that novices should not indulge in it too frequently. Cf. *Al-Luma'*, 287 f. and *Al-Qushairi, Risāla*, 218, where instruction is given regarding the practice of audition by novices. *J.R.A.S.* (1901), 709, expresses the view that there is danger in audition to the novice. See also Introduction, p. 6.

Allāh (Exalted is He !) with reference to their stations, because they are detached from what is other than Allāh towards Allāh (Exalted is He !). Allāh (Exalted is He !) said, "They seek His face."<sup>1</sup> As often as they come upon anything of the forms, they apply it to the hidden meanings,<sup>2</sup> as he (Allāh bless him, etc.) said concerning Usaid ibn Al-Ḥuḍair<sup>3</sup> when he said, "O apostle of Allāh, I was reciting Sūra *Al-Kahf*<sup>4</sup> last night, and lo, over my head was a cloud in which was the likeness of lamps"; he said, "That was the *sakīna*,"<sup>5</sup> and he did not treat the cloud as a mere cloud. *Sakīna* is [of the form] *fa'ilā* from [the root] *sukūn*, and it is repose in the lights of the unseen world which come down upon one because of one's going backwards and forwards and passing their forms, which are the words of the Qur'ān.<sup>6</sup> And similarly the saints of Allāh (Exalted is He !) apply the forms to the realities (*ma'āni*) on account of their abandoning the ranks of the forms and their moving in the ranks of the branches of gnosis. So among them the tambourine is a reference to the cycle of existing things (*dā'ira al-akwān*); the skin which is fitted on to it is a reference to general existence (*al-wujūd al-muṭlaq*), the striking which takes place on the tambourine is a reference to the descent of the divine visitations (*wāridāt*) from the innermost arcana (*bātin al-buṭūn*) upon general existence to bring forth the things pertaining to the essence from the interior to the exterior, the five small bells (*jalājil*) are a reference to the prophetical

<sup>1</sup> Qur. vi, 52; xviii, 27.

<sup>2</sup> i.e. they seek the inner meaning of external things.

<sup>3</sup> Son of a chief of the Aus in Al-Madīna. He was present at the second pledge of the 'Aqaba. He supported Muḥammad in several battles, but was absent from Badr. He was reckoned among the chief Companions. d. 20/641. Cf. Ibn Sa'd, iii, 2, pp. 135 ff.

<sup>4</sup> Sūra, xviii.

<sup>5</sup> A form borrowed from the Hebrew *shekīna*. In Arabic it is commonly explained as meaning peace of soul. This story seems to be made up of a combination of two traditions. Cf. Muslim, ii, 247 f.

<sup>6</sup> The words of the Qur'ān were external things which had an inner meaning for Usaid.

ranks, the saintly ranks, the apostolic ranks, the khalifate ranks, and the imāmate ranks, and their combined sound is a reference to the appearance of the divine revelations and unrestricted knowledge by means of these realities in the hearts of the saints and the people of perfection. And the soul of the reality is the form of the rank of the Truth (Exalted and holy is He !), since it is He who sets the things in motion, brings them into existence, and enriches them. And the voice of the singer is a reference to the divine (*rabbānīya*) life which comes down from the innermost arcana to the levels (*marātib*) of the spirits, the hearts, and the consciences (*asrār*). The flute (*qaṣab*) is a reference to the human essence, and the nine holes are a reference to the openings in the outer frame (*zāhir*), which are nine, viz. the ears, the nostrils, the eyes, the mouth, and the private parts (*al-qubl wa'l-dubr*). Nine other holes are inverted from the exterior to the interior, viz. the armpits, the inner part of the elbows, under the knees, the inner part of the wrists and the navel. And there are nine ranks inside [the body] viz. the heart, the mind, the spirit, the soul, the conscience, the human essence, the memory, the interior of the heart (*fu'ād*), and the pericardium (*shaghāf*). And the breath which penetrates the flute is a reference to the light of Allāh (Exalted is He !) penetrating the reed of man's essence. And their being moved in audition is a reference to the bird of human reality in the station of the eternal <sup>1</sup> address, "Am I not your Lord ?" <sup>2</sup> and to the excitement of the spirit on account of the cage of the body being broken and its return to the true home, since he said, " Love of home pertains to faith," i.e. the home of the spirits in which the spirit was brought into existence, since He said, "And I breathed into him of my spirit," <sup>3</sup> And the dancing is a reference to the circling of the spirit round the cycle of existing

<sup>1</sup> *Azalī*, which is a very difficult word to translate. It is an adjective formed from *azal*, which means eternity from the point of view of its having no beginning. *Abad* means eternity from the point of view of its having no end.

<sup>2</sup> Qur. vii, 171. See p. 69, n. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Qur. xv, 29; xxxviii, 72.

things on account of receiving the effects of the unveilings and revelations ; and this is the state of the gnostic. The whirling is a reference to the spirit's standing with Allāh in its inner nature (*sīrr*) and being (*wujūd*), the circling of its look and thought, and its penetrating the ranks of existing things ; and this is the state of the assured one. And his leaping up is a reference to his being drawn from the human station to the unitive station and to existing things acquiring from him spiritual effects and illuminative helps.<sup>1</sup> Then when his spirit goes forth from the veil and reaches the ranks of what is right, his head is uncovered. Then when he is detached from what is other than Allāh and reaches Allāh (Exalted is He !), he takes off his clothing ; and if the singer is the possessor of a state (*hāl*)<sup>2</sup> and a station (*maqām*), he throws his clothing to him ; but if he is not such, throwing it to him is a wrong, because the garment of the possessor of a state is the form of his state, and only he who is of his rank deserves to receive his state.<sup>3</sup> Then if he rises to a higher station and the singer is speaking in a lower station, he suggests to him a verse suitable for his state.<sup>4</sup> But if something about which he sang becomes dubious to him and his state comes to a stop, he takes someone else and circles with him that their states may be united and his bond may be loosed.<sup>5</sup> Then when he becomes thirsty and asks for a drink

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Kashf al-mahjūb*, 416, "In short, all foot-play is bad in law and reason, by whomsoever it is practised, and the best of mankind cannot possibly practise it ; but when the heart throbs with exhilaration and rapture becomes intense and the agitation of ecstasy is manifested and conventional forms are gone, that agitation is neither dancing nor foot-play nor bodily indulgence, but a dissolution of the soul."

<sup>2</sup> The distinction between a "state" and a "station" is that the "state" is a divine gift, whereas the "station" is attained by human effort. Cf. Al-Qushairi, *Risāla*, 38 ; *Kashf al-mahjūb*, 181 f.

<sup>3</sup> For the practice of throwing off garments (and also of tearing them), cf. *Kashf al-mahjūb*, 417 f. ; *JRAS.* (1902), 9 ff.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *JRAS.* (1901), 744.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. *JRAS.* (1902), 11 f., where it says that those who perform the dance together should experience the same "state". On the problem of people in one state not understanding people in another cf. Al-Kalābādī, *Ta'arruf* (Arberry), 77.

of water, it indicates that he is overpowered, because the station of the spirit is the station of serenity and dryness from the lights ; so when he becomes thirsty it indicates that he has returned to the station of the body, since the station of the spirit is [that of] getting nourishment from the unseen, so that it does not require the seen ; while the station of the body is [that of] getting nourishment from the form. So when he returns from the unseen to the seen, he asks for water, and that indicates defect.

As for the signification understood by the intellect which indicates the nobility of audition, its nature is contrast from various points of view.

I. One is that the states which are connected with a thing are of two kinds, movement and quiescence. Movement is a characteristic of spirits and inner natures, and quiescence is a characteristic of bodies and crass forms. And heat and rendering delicate are among the requisites of movement, while solidification and deterioration are among the requisites of quiescence. On this account, should water remain in its jar, even though it were a large quantity, it would deteriorate with the passage of time ; while if it is flowing a little, it does not deteriorate. So when a measured sound affects the inner being, it moves the spirit to seek ascent, and the body is moved by the movement of the spirit. Then heat arises within it and the superfluities of its nature are loosed, and marks which are seen appear in its heart ; and that is by the agency of audition.

II. The second is that sensual nourishment strengthens the body, which results from coming in contact with food, while spiritual nourishment strengthens the heart and the inner nature. That arises from coming in contact with the instruments of bringing down spirit, light, and life from the unseen world. And it is the stirring of the spirit by listening to wonderful realities in delicate poems and the abandonment of the attachments of created things, and being drawn to the spiritual stages (*manāzil*). Now the instrument of obtaining

these lights is the association of the brethren and the seeking of help from Allāh, the Merciful.

III. The third is that audition detaches one from external things and inclines one to accept the hidden lights and secrets. Then as often as one's ecstasy (*wajd*) increases in audition, one's travelling and flying in the world of spirits increases. And when one's increase is abundant, the heart is made fine, and one receives some of the marks of the outpouring and revelations of Allāh (Exalted is He!); then one attains the station of union (*wuṣūl*) without a new religious exercise (*riyāda*).

IV. The fourth is that the sound *Huwā*<sup>1</sup> is penetration from the exterior to the interior and is joined to the heart; then the heart and the spirit are joyful by means of the variation of measured notes and by the number of the realities which come down upon the spirit in the ranks of existing things. So when the spirit follows the body in movement and the body follows the spirit in presence, light, and joy it is detached from suppositions and imaginations, and the realities which are combined in the spirit penetrate the bodily powers. Then when the body is drawn to the station of the spirit the veil is removed, and it sees those realities and truths all at once. This is the station of the perfection of actual vision which does not arise by many religious exercises.

V. The fifth is that audition is quiescence in the internal and movement in the external; and other acts of worship, except fasting, are a movement in the external, and the movement in the external corresponds to abundance. So as often as the movement is abundant in audition and quiescence becomes strong in the heart, it is detached from everything but Allāh (Exalted is He!), ecstasy appears in it, and it is drawn to the Unique Presence. Then by the sight of the inner nature it sees the divine worlds and comprehends

<sup>1</sup> The repetition of the word *huwā* (He) with lengthening of the second vowel, is a mystic practice.

the divine (*rabbāniya*) secrets which intellects and understandings cannot grasp. And as for the three pillars,<sup>1</sup> like prayer, pilgrimage, and the two testimonies, even if they are a movement in the external and the internal, yet sometimes a spiritual and facial quiescence which leads its possessor to annihilation (*fanā'*) and immortality (*baqā'*)<sup>2</sup> appears between two movements. As for fasting, it is a quiescence in the external and the internal, and sometimes a movement from Allāh, in Allāh, to Allāh comes forth between two periods of quiescence, and that is the complete liberation and the universal law.<sup>3</sup> So the inner nature (*sīr*) of audition in its various ranks (*marātib*) comprises the verities of the five pillars ; for prayer, pilgrimage, and the two testimonies pertain to external ranks, and fasting and almsgiving to internal ranks ; and sometimes a man gets from audition perfections such as are not obtained from persistence in many acts of devotion.

VI. The sixth is that audition comprises the perfect states which are the limits of the stations. Its *sīn* and *mīm*<sup>4</sup> indicate *samm* (poison), meaning that the inner nature of audition is like poison which causes one to die to the attachments of things which are other than Allāh and causes one to reach the unseen stations. Its 'ain and *mīm* indicate *ma'a* (with), meaning that audition causes one to reach the Essential, divine co-existence (*ma'īya*). He (Peace be upon him !)<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> In Islām there are five pillars of practical religion : (1) The testimony that Allāh is the only God and Muḥammad is His prophet ; (2) prayer ; (3) almsgiving ; (4) fasting ; (5) pilgrimage.

<sup>2</sup> These are technical mystical terms referring to the death of the self and life in God. Cf. Al-Qushairī, *Risāla*, 43 f. ; *Kashf al-mahjūb*, 242 ff. ; Nicholson, *Studies*, 55, 214 f., 218, 261 ; Smith, *Early Mysticism*, 215, 242, 252 ; Al-Kalābādī, *Ta'arruf* (Arberry), 120 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Al-Sarrāj says that the audition of those who have attained to the verities is in Allāh, to Allāh, from Allāh, and unto Allāh. *Al-Luma'*, 279.

<sup>4</sup> The author makes up words from the letters of *samā'* (audition), and tries to draw teachings from them regarding audition.

<sup>5</sup> This is given in the MSS. instead of the usual invocation of blessing on Muḥammad.

said, "I have a time with Allāh in which no angel who is brought near [Allāh's presence] or prophet who is sent on a mission is enough for me."<sup>1</sup> Its *sīn*, *mīm*, and *alif* indicate *samā'* (heaven) to make known that audition causes one to become supernal and heavenly, and one comes forth from the lower ranks. And its *alif* and *mīm* indicate *umm* (mother) to tell that he who engages in audition is the mother of everything else, gets support from the unseen by his spiritual nature, and pours forth on everything else life and knowledge which the word *mā'* (water) indicates. Its 'ain and *mīm* indicate 'amm (inclusive), i.e. he who engages in audition includes in his spiritual nature supernal things, in the life of his heart human things, and in the light of his pure soul bodily things and other states. So he who engages in audition rises to the high stations and the divine favours which one cannot attain to by a thousand efforts and the most perfect religious exercises. And the benefits of audition reach a hundred benefits and a hundred thousand states which he who has taste,<sup>2</sup> ecstasy, and insight discovers. Only he disapproves of audition who is blind of heart, lacking in light, thickly veiled, neglectful of Allāh (Exalted is He !), and inclining to the appetite and passion. Allāh (Exalted is He !) said, "And when they hear what has been sent down to the apostle, you see their eyes pouring with tears from what they know of the truth. They say, 'Our Lord, we believe, so write us down among the testifiers. And why should we not believe in Allāh and the truth which has come to us, and desire that our Lord should cause us to enter along with the upright people ?'"<sup>3</sup>

The epilogue concerning the explanation of the nature of audition as it is understood among the saints, the lords of

<sup>1</sup> Al-Sarrāj quotes, on the authority of Al-Ḥuṣrī, a similar saying : "I have a time with Allāh in which nothing other than Allāh (great and glorious is He !) is enough for me along with Him." Doubt is thrown on its genuineness. *Al-Luma'*, 115.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. p. 71, n. 6.

<sup>3</sup> Qur. v, 86 f.

the states, and the stations, to stir their spirits to the world of holiness and remind them of the station of mankind.

So when they purpose that, they gather together in the early morning after finishing the dawn prayer, or after the evening [prayer], after finishing their office (*wird*), be it recitation [of the Qur'ān], *dhikr*, or any act of worship whatsoever. When they sit down, he of their number who has the most sensitive voice recites such a passage as, "And Allāh rescues the God-fearing in their safe place. No evil will touch them, and they will not grieve . . ." down to His saying (Exalted is He!), "And be among the grateful."<sup>1</sup> Or, "Verily the God-fearing will be in gardens and springs receiving what their Lord has brought them. Verily before that they were doing good . . ." down to His saying (Exalted is He!), "You utter."<sup>2</sup> Or "And the sky, we have built it with bands and verily we are expanding . . ." down to His saying (Exalted is He!), "So flee to Allāh; verily I am a clear warner from Him to you."<sup>3</sup> Or, "Did you not see that Allāh sent down water from heaven so that the earth might become green? Verily Allāh is kindly and knowing."<sup>4</sup> And passages like that. Altogether he recites verses which indicate seeking advancement, increase, care, and guarding. Then the *shaikh*<sup>5</sup> speaks about the meaning of these verses in a manner suited to the station of mystical practices (*sulūk*). He says, Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, "Verily, the Qur'ān has an exterior and an interior, a limit and a source."<sup>6</sup> Now the external meaning of these verses is in existing things for the people of consideration, and their internal meaning is in man for the people of revelation and secrets. Now the meaning of this verse, "And Allāh rescues," i.e. He rescues those who fear the ranks of the appetite and passion and

<sup>1</sup> Qur. xxxix, 62-6.

<sup>2</sup> Qur. li, 15-23.

<sup>3</sup> Qur. li, 47-50.

<sup>4</sup> Qur. xxii, 62.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. *Kashf al-mahjūb*, 419, "It is necessary that a spiritual director should be present during the performance."

<sup>6</sup> Cf. *Qūt al-qulūb*, i, 77.

come forth from the hindrances which pertain to repulsion and deviation. So Allāh (Exalted is He !) rescues them from attachment to what is other than Allāh. And the being drawn towards Allāh (Exalted is He !) and the reception of the divine instructions (*ta'*rīfā') take place without an intermediary, since Allāh (Exalted is He !) said, “ And fear Allāh, and Allāh teaches you.” Their minds are perfect with wisdom (*hikma*) and gnosis (*ma'rifa*) ; their hearts are perfect with the states (*ahwāl*), the tastes (*adhwāq*) and the ecstasies (*mawājīd*) ; and their souls are perfect with good deeds and pure characters to interpret every existing thing according to the purpose of Allāh (Exalted is He !). Then He sends them back from the truth to the creatures (*khalq*), seeking to transfer to others by means of them the marks of the divine attributes which pertain to life and knowledge. So when they leave the divine presence in mind and soul and are attached to what is other than Allāh (Exalted is He !), on account of seeing the marks of His actions and the perfecting of the ranks of His noumena (*ma'qūlāt*), no evil touches them by this accidental attachment, i.e. distance and being veiled from the Unique Presence, since they are with Allāh in their inner being and spirit, and with the creatures in their perception and soul ; “ and they will not grieve ” on account of the lack of the departure of the stages, stations, and states which they possess.

And he says about the second example, “ Verily the God-fearing,” by abandoning what is other than Allāh and being drawn to Him secretly and openly, “ will be in gardens ” of the branches of gnosis and unseen sciences, “ receiving ” from Allāh “ what He has brought them ” of illuminations and instructions. “ Verily, they were before that,” i.e. in the state of mystical practices journeying and seeking, “ doing good ” with their souls by keeping to the ordinances and laws, and with their minds by applying themselves to good thoughts and understanding the Unitarian secrets.

And about the third : “ And the sky,” i.e. the sky of the

spirits, "we have built it," i.e. we have brought it to light from the divine unseen to the decree of existence; "with bands" i.e. with power, knowledge, and will; "and verily, we are expanding" the ranks of the spirits, that various kinds of unitarian secrets and ecstatic ranks may be revealed in them; "and the earth," i.e. the earth of the pure, unsullied hearts; "we have spread it," i.e. we have spread it as the earth of the hearts, that there may appear in it various kinds of wisdom, gnosis, gentleness, and subtleties; "so good are the smoothers," i.e. we have spread it in a determinative and not a statutory manner, and on this account it comprises thousands of kinds of sciences and branches of gnosis; "and of everything we have created a pair," i.e. like spirit and body, form and meaning, beauty and character, etc.; "perhaps you may take note" that the rank (*rutba*) of wisdom includes the causes and the things caused, and the rank of power (*qudra*) the appearance of things without an intermediary; "so flee" from the seen to the unseen, from the names to the Namer, from the attributes to the essence, and from transience to eternity.

And he says about the fourth example, "Did you not see," with the eye of discernment; "that Allāh sent down" from the sky of the spirits the rain of the sciences and the branches of gnosis on the earth of the pure, unsullied hearts to avoid inclining to what is other than Allāh; "so that the earth" of the hearts "might become green" with various kinds of acts of worship and repairings and acceptable characteristics, like generosity, pardon, pity, humility, honour, etc.

Then the *qawwāl* engages in instructive speech and a saying pertaining to the Lord,<sup>1</sup> like,

Thou hast in the hearts stations and a place which neither the intellect nor the understandings can comprehend.

<sup>1</sup> *J.R.I.S.* (1901), 738 ff., has an interesting argument to show why verses of the Qur'ān are not sufficient to induce ecstasy. In certain circumstances poetry may be more suitable, as it is not so familiar.

Then if someone says, " You have given the Truth (Exalted is He !) a station and a place, and that is anthropomorphism," we say, It is thus expressed simply out of adherence to what the wise lawgiver said. When he was asked, " Where is Allāh in the earth ? " he said, " In the hearts of His believing servants." <sup>1</sup>

And like,

Every morning and every dawn my eye weeps with the tears of one who yearns.

The snake of passion has stung my heart,<sup>2</sup> and there is no physician for it and none to apply a charm,

Save the Beloved of whom I am enamoured ; with Him are my charm and my antidote.

And like his saying,<sup>3</sup>

Come, Sa'd, let us cross the deserts in fealty to the love He has cast into me.<sup>4</sup>

I have a passion in desire for Him. That which determines the states of purity in every living being<sup>5</sup> has appeared to me.

I sought to efface myself to glorify Him ; there is no universal attribution except to me.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Qūt al-qulūb*, i, 175.

<sup>2</sup> Lit. " liver ".

<sup>3</sup> The following verses cannot be a part of the original work, as they would appear to be in fairly close imitation of the first ode in the *dīwān* of Ibn al-Fārid (d. 632/1235). Majd al-Dīn died in 520/1126. The first, sixth, and last three lines are particularly close to Ibn al-Fārid's words. It is conceivable that Ibn al-Fārid used these verses as a basis for his ode, but this is hardly likely. Another argument against their genuineness is that they are given only in B. C gives no verses at all. P gives all the verses but those of this poem and the following one. These two poems omitted by P, occupy exactly one side of a folio in B. I therefore incline to consider that they have been added by a later hand.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. v. 1 of Ibn al-Fārid's ode.

<sup>5</sup> Professor R. A. Nicholson, to whom I am indebted for drawing my attention to the resemblance between this poem and that of Ibn al-Fārid, has suggested that *ḥaiy* (living being) may here have its other meaning of " clan ", and that the phrase may therefore mean " everywhere ".

<sup>6</sup> His effacing of himself has brought him into union with God.

All the various grades [of existence] depend perpetually on me<sup>1</sup>; verily, they are the laws<sup>2</sup> of a revelation, my brother.

He does not see me who has in himself any perception of a shadow in the suns of ecstasy.

The state of passing away in love of Him has brought me increase [of mystical life]; I care not whether I am spread out or folded up.<sup>3</sup>

All attributes appeared under His authority; that is the mystery of the unitive state, "of you and related to me."<sup>4</sup>

My dear companions, why do you deny my [mystic] state after acknowledging it to me as a youth?<sup>5</sup>

His wine has put me in [a state of] purity, as the *lām kay* in grammar puts a verb in the subjunctive.<sup>6</sup>

The glad news of union with the life everlasting has come to

<sup>1</sup> The speaker must be a *qub* (pole), the highest grade among the saints. *Kashf al-mahjūb*, 213 f., says that the saints govern the universe. The highest of those who have power to loose and bind is the *qub* or *ghauth* (helper). Cf. Nicholson, *Studies*, p. 86, "Jili calls the Perfect Man the preserver of the universe, the *Qub* or Pole on which all the spheres of existence revolve." *ibid.*, 194, 246.

<sup>2</sup> i.e. the laws governing the coming of revelation.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Ibn al-Fārid's ode, 1, 5.

<sup>4</sup> The MS. has *min-kum au 'alaīy* (from you or upon me), which is a very difficult phrase to explain. There is a common phrase *min-ka wa ilāika* which means "of thee and related to thee". It is discussed by Goldziher in *ZDMG.*, 48, pp. 95 ff., and by Kaufmann, *ibid.*, pp. 425 ff. This phrase may be at the basis of the words in the text. In its ordinary form it would not suit the metre, so *min-kum* and *au* may be explained on this ground. I suggest emending *'alaīy* to *ilāiy*. The phrase may then be understood with reference to the unitive state as meaning that the terms "thee" and "me" are one and the same thing.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. Ibn al-Fārid's ode, 1, 19.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. *ibid.*, 1, 21. In B the line ends with *lā miray* (without doubt). I am indebted to Professor Nicholson for suggesting the emendation here, as it is obviously correct, following Ibn al-Fārid. The *lām kay* is the particle which expresses purpose and governs the subjunctive. There is a pun in the Arabic which cannot be reproduced in English, the verb translated "put" having the same root letters as the word for "subjunctive".

me ; this Gazelle [the Beloved] is the hunter of the lions among mankind [i.e. the mystics].<sup>1</sup>

And like,

Knowledge of reality is a revelation which comprises the ranks of existing things and of various kinds.

Then when you pass away from the use of figures,<sup>2</sup> having understanding, you comprehend the law of the verities of the Merciful.

There is no reasoning in the mystical apprehension which realizes plurality in the gracious summit of the unity of His essence.<sup>3</sup>

If you seek to open a comprehensive gate, verify the realities of the phenomena of every place.

Then divest yourself of looking at the figures [ideas] whence comes all that constitutes the purest faith.<sup>4</sup>

Then when you raise the standard of high glory, and obliterate the marks of passion and baseness,

At that time you realize what constitutes His inner being, and understand the unity of His gracious face.

And like his saying,

All existence is speaking of the outpouring of Thy generosity, and the beauty of Thy face is shining in the perceptions.

The farthest point reached by [earthly] lovers in their deserts is but the starting-point of the lover [i.e. the mystic] and of him whom realities enclose.

When He appeared from <sup>5</sup> the state of being <sup>5</sup> an all-comprehending hidden consciousness, He removed the veil, and that is an extraordinary matter.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Ibn al-Fāriḍ's ode, 1, 25, where a similar figure is used. The commentary explains that the poet is called a lion because of his boldness in treading Allāh's way and opposing fleshly desires ; while the gazelle is the Beloved.

<sup>2</sup> i.e. ideas which are perceived by sense perception.

<sup>3</sup> For the idea of unity in plurality cf. Nicholson, *Studies*, pp. 96 ff.

<sup>4</sup> What may help others is a hindrance to the mystic. He can attain to the purest faith only by divesting himself of everything connected with sense perception.

<sup>5</sup> . . . <sup>5</sup> Lit. "the law of".

The revelation came from the station of His attributes and obliterated revelations. . . .<sup>1</sup>

A splendour to which [all] places of sunrise and sunset returned<sup>2</sup> produced flashes of noble qualities.

This is He whom I showed from the height of purity, the Truth of Reality, and He is a surpassing mystery.

At the time of His appearing, virgins of the inner room of love had girdles bound round their waists.

Do not seek knowledge in its effects ; the revealing is a raising and the passing away is congruous.

Nay, seek the perfection of effacement in honouring Him, that outpourings from Him may be in your heart.

Now if the *qawwāl* utters poetry in which there is a description of a cheek, a mole, and a stature, it is to be applied to the cheek, mole, and stature of the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.).

As for the instruments of diversion, they are all forbidden by common consent, such as the harp (*jank*),<sup>3</sup> the viol (*rabāb*),<sup>4</sup> the lute ('ūd), the Persian lute (*barbat*),<sup>5</sup> the reed-pipe (*mizmār*),<sup>6</sup> and such like,<sup>7</sup> with the exception of the tambourine (*duff*),<sup>8</sup> for two sound traditions about the permissibility of listening to the tambourine are handed down in *Al-Bukhārī* and *Muslim*. So those who have taste follow him (Allāh bless him, etc.).

<sup>1</sup> The line ends with "in which there is no *tāriq*. The sense is not at all clear. *Tāriq* means "one who knocks", "one who raids", "one who comes by night", "one who divines with pebbles", "morning star"; but none of these meanings seem to be suitable here.

<sup>2</sup> Professor Nicholson has explained this phrase to me as meaning, a splendour which is the ultimate source of all lights.

<sup>3</sup> See Farmer, *History*, 16, 18, 210.

<sup>4</sup> "The generic name in Arabic for the viol, or any stringed instrument played with a bow." *Enc. of Islām*, iii, 1084 ff. Cf. also Farmer, *Or. Mus. Instr.*, 75, 99 ff.

<sup>5</sup> For the 'ūd and the *barbat* see *Enc. of Islām*, iv, 985 ff.

<sup>6</sup> See *Enc. of Islām*, iii, 539 ff.

<sup>7</sup> Cf. Al-*Ghazālī*, *JRAS*. (1901), 211, 237, where reference is made to the prohibition of stringed instruments and pipes because they are associated with *mukhannathūn* and drinkers.

<sup>8</sup> See Farmer, *op. cit.*, 84.

The condition of their assembling is that no beardless youth should be among them,<sup>1</sup> nor should there be a window through which women can look at them ; but if pious beardless youths are among them, they sit behind the men. Then when they experience within them a stirring which affects them like the commotion of one who is called to the service of a mighty king and to appear before Allāh (Exalted is He !), he who falls into ecstasy does not rise till he is overpowered, and the people do as he does. The dance is not to be affected or feigned, nay, their movements must be in accordance with the state, like one who is overcome by terror or unavoidable trepidation.<sup>2</sup> Then when their spirits receive a mystical apprehension (*hazz*) of the unseen states, and their hearts are softened by the lights of the divine Essence and are established in purity and the spiritual lights, they sit down, and he who chants (*muzamzim*) chants a light chant to bring them forth by degrees from the internal to the external. Then when he stops, someone other than the first reciter recites such [a passage] as " This is our gift, so be lavish, or withhold without account . . ." to His saying (Exalted is He !), " those endowed with minds " <sup>3</sup>; or, " Verily, those who say, ' Our Lord is Allāh,' then are steadfast. . . ." to His saying (Exalted is He !), " possessor of a mighty share," <sup>4</sup> and such like. Then if there is among them anyone in whom remains the residue of a state or of absorption, the *qawwāl* repeats [what he uttered] in a lighter voice than the first ; and if they remain seated, he does it a third time in a voice intermediate between the heavy and the light, since the complete ranks are three, the rank of men, the rank of the angel, and the rank of Lordship (*rubūbiya*) at which there is absolute quiescence. Then they get up from the place of audition and go to their dwellings and sit watching for the

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Kashf al-mahjūb*, 416 f.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. op. cit., 415 f.; *JRAS.* (1902), 4.

<sup>3</sup> Qur. xxxviii, 38-42.

<sup>4</sup> Qur. xli, 30-5.

revelation of what appeared to them in the state of their absorption in ecstasy. After audition some of them dispense with food for days on account of the nourishment of their spirits and hearts with unseen mystical experiences (*wāridāt*). This is the way of the people, and no-one who has the least share of religion and light rejects such states as these.

As time went on, they permitted pious women who were of their number to look at them through windows and elsewhere, and [also allowed] their assembling with beardless youths who were pious, but not with others. Things went on like that till the common people imitated them, and the good was mingled with the corrupt, and the system was disordered.<sup>1</sup> So everyone must look to his own state and what pertains to him and leave everything else, just like him who lives among the sick ; so he must be occupied with himself alone. Thus in the earliest times the religion was tender and fresh, strong and uncontaminated by any trace of corrupt beliefs and misleading opinions ; but as time went on, beliefs became corrupted and misleading deeds became abundant,<sup>2</sup> as the lawgiver foretold in his saying, " My people will divide into seventy-three sects, one of which will be saved while the remainder perish." It was said, " O, apostle of Allāh, who are the sect which will be saved ? " He said, " The one to which I and my Companions belong." <sup>3</sup>

So it is now necessary for every pious person to apply himself to what is true and abandon what is vain. And similarly the audition which is approved among the saints is what we have mentioned. And when the good is mingled with the

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Kashf al-mahjūb*, 409.

<sup>2</sup> References to a deterioration with the passage of time are common. Sometimes it is said to be after the second or third generation of Islām (cf. Al-Bukhārī, *Shahādāt*, 9 ; *al-aimān wa'l-nudhūr*, 10 ; Abū Dāwud, *Sunna*, 9) ; at the end of the second century (cf. *Qūt al-qulūb*, iv, 227 f.) ; or at the end of the third century (cf. op. cit., ii, 41 f.).

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Abū Dāwud, *Sunna*, 1 ; Ahmad ibn Hanbal, iv, 102. In Ahmad ibn Hanbal, iii, 145, there is a form of the tradition nearer the wording given by Majd al-Dīn, but it is peculiar in that it gives the number as seventy-two.

corrupt, every possessor of taste and ecstasy must apply himself to audition according to its established conditions, and not withdraw from it at the word of an objector and opponent, for that brings about the abandonment of imitating the saints, and then one goes forth from the state of affairs [mentioned in] his saying (Peace be upon him !), " He who resembles a people is one of them." <sup>1</sup>

As to the poor who are credited with belonging to this party but are not of them, their state with reference to the saints of earlier times is like the state of the jurists of the present time with reference to the jurists of earlier times, men of godliness and piety. That means that the principle of jurisprudence requires abstinence, godliness, piety, contentment with little worldly gear, lack of seeking luxuries, lack of running to the gates of kings except in the service of others, continuance in what the Prophet (Allāh bless him, etc.) endured ; his practice (Allāh bless him, etc.) was [expressed in the saying], " I am hungry one day and satisfied another." And 'A'isha (Allāh be pleased with her !) said, " Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.) did not eat his fill from the time that news came to Al-Madīna of the raising of his power (Allāh bless him, etc.) over the weakening influence of pleasures," <sup>2</sup> although the Truth (Exalted is He !) allowed that, when He (Exalted is He !) said, " O apostles, eat of the good things and do that which is good." <sup>3</sup> [The principle of jurisprudence also requires] lack of building what one does not need, according to what has come down in the tradition, " If anyone builds above what he needs, Allāh will compel him to carry it on his shoulder." <sup>4</sup> [It also requires] the continual practice of humility. The learned among the pious men of early days were like that.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. p. 74, n. 4.

<sup>2</sup> I am not familiar with this tradition, but traditions which speak of the hardship of Muhammad's life are frequent.

<sup>3</sup> Qur. xxiii, 53.

<sup>4</sup> For a similar tradition, cf. Ibn Māja, *Zuhd*, 13.

It is related of Abū Ḥanīfa (Allāh have mercy on him !) that when the Caliph offered him the office of *qādī*, he refused it, holding to his saying (Peace be upon him !), "He who is made a *qādī* is slaughtered without a knife" <sup>1</sup>; and to his saying (Peace be upon him !), "The *qādīs* are three, two in hell and one in Paradise." <sup>2</sup> This was due to his godliness, religion, and holding to tradition. So when he came into the Caliph's presence and refused to accept the office of *qādī* when he offered it to him, he was stripped and beaten till the mark of the blows could be seen on his back and blood flowed from him. Then he consulted his friends, and they said, "What you consider to be for the best is right." Abū Yūsuf <sup>3</sup> said, "There is no harm in that, for it comprises the benefit of the people." He then said, "It is as though I were chiding a *qādī*." Thereafter Al-Maṇṣūr visited Abū Ḥanīfa, <sup>4</sup> and among other things, he condoled with him and said, "This is the [greatest] jurist of Al-‘Irāq." Then he summoned him and ordered that he should be given a thousand dirhams for every lash; and it is said that he had received fifty strokes. Then he offered him the office of *qādī*, but he said, "I am not fit for it." Yet again he offered it to him, and he said, "I must either be telling the truth, or telling a falsehood. Now if I am telling the truth, it is not right that you should appoint one who is not fit for it; and if I am telling a falsehood, it is not right that you should appoint one who tells falsehoods." <sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Abū Dāwud, *Aqdiya*, 1.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., *Aqdiya*, 2.

<sup>3</sup> d. 182. A Ḥanafī, who was *qādī* of Baghādād. See *Enc. of Islām*, i, 114.

<sup>4</sup> B has "the Caliph", which is obviously a scribal error. I suggest that "Abū Ḥanīfa" is the correct reading.

<sup>5</sup> There are stories of Abū Ḥanīfa being offered the office of *qādī* both in the time of Marwān II, the last Umayyad Caliph, and of Al-Maṇṣūr, the second 'Abbāsid Caliph. In Marwān's time Yazīd ibn 'Umar ibn Hubaira, *amīr* of the two 'Irāqs, is said to have administered ten lashes daily till the number reached 110, because he refused the office (Cf. Ibn Khall, iii, 557 f.; *Al-Nawawī's Biog. Dict.*, 700). The story given above differs from this, as it says Abū Ḥanīfa was brought before the Caliph (Marwān ?)

Similarly it is handed down about Abū'l-Laith Al-Samarqandī<sup>1</sup> that he was godly and attentive to religion, so that he said, “For so many years the angel who records my evil deeds (*sāhib al-shimāl*)<sup>2</sup> did not record anything against me in proportion,” i.e. he knew his attentiveness to religion. An inquirer associated with him for a period, serving him and learning from him, and did not hear him utter one word of slander. If anyone began to slander [another] in his presence, he bent down his head to turn away from him and would not face him, to prevent his mind and heart from being injured, even if he [was speaking] the truth.

And the imām Jamāl al-Dīn al-Mahbūnī<sup>3</sup> in Bukhārā was like that. He was a self-denying, godly jurist who occupied himself with bodily acts of worship and busied himself with knowledge and learning ; he never busied himself with anyone. When someone said to him, “So and so is an evildoer,” he replied, “He (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, ‘Part of the goodness of a man’s Islām is to leave alone what does not

and received fifty strokes. An account of Al-Mansūr’s dealings with Abū Ḥanifa which corresponds in some respects with the story in the text above, is given in Ibn Khall., iii, 556 f. ; Al-Nawawī, op. cit., 700 f., but there is no reference to his gift, and it is said that he imprisoned him after his second refusal. Th. W. Juynboll (*Enc. of Islām*, i, 91) suggests that the whole story is a “legend, invented by later Ḥanafites, who could not understand that the Government had never tried to induce the master to enter its service”.

<sup>1</sup> A Ḥanafī jurist and theologian. d. between 373 and 393 (983 and 1002). Cf. Sarkis, *Dictionnaire Encyclopédique*, 1045 ; *Enc. of Islām*, i, 98.

<sup>2</sup> Everyone is said to have two recording angels, one on the right hand to record good deeds, and one on the left to record evil deeds. Cf. Hughes, *Dict. of Islām*, 279. Qur. 1, 16, speaks of the “two meeters” who sit one on the right and the other on the left. This follows immediately on a reference to Allāh being nearer to man than his jugular vein. Cf. Al-Baidāwī, in loc., where he says that Allāh knows matters which may escape even the recording angels. See also Qur. lxxxii, 11. *Qūt al-qulūb*, ii, 68, says the novice is not repentant till the companion of the left hand (*sāhib al-shimāl*) has had nothing to record for twenty years. It also says (ii, 81 f., 117) that the companion of the right hand is superior to the companion of the left.

<sup>3</sup> I can find no reference to anyone of this name.

concern him.’<sup>1</sup> And he (Peace be upon him !) said, ‘ Begin with yourself, then [deal with] him whom you support.’<sup>2</sup> For it is not right that one whose own self is deficient should busy himself with other people.”

Thus was the custom of the jurists of former times, but the jurists of the present time are the very opposite of that. They are characterized by avidity, cupidity, going backwards and forwards to the gates of kings, discussing people’s reputation, and continual slander. He (Peace be upon him !) said, “ Slander is more serious than fornication.”<sup>3</sup> And he (Peace be upon him !) said, “ Slander means that you say concerning your brother what he dislikes.” Then a man said, “ O apostle of Allāh, suppose my brother does what I say ? ” He (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, “ If your brother does what you say, you have slandered him ; and if not, you have cast aspersions on him.”<sup>4</sup> And he (Allāh bless him, etc.) said, “ Do not envy, hate, or backbite one another, but be servants of Allāh and brethren.”<sup>5</sup> Forbidden to a Muslim are another Muslim’s reputation, blood, and property, mutual envy, mutual hate, continual slander, discussing one another’s reputation, and lack of eagerness to learn a thing in its true nature. But on the contrary, everyone is satisfied with what others say and has no eagerness to learn a thing in its true nature, the truth of the matter, its origin, the way to discover it and verify texts which prove it and answer objections to it ; and there is lack of respect for the learned and the pious. So it appears from what is happening that the actions, affairs, and jurisprudence of the jurists of the present day in comparison

<sup>1</sup> Al-Tirmidhī, *Zuhd*, 11 ; Ibn Māja, *Fitān*, 12.

<sup>2</sup> This is an example of a tradition quoted altogether out of its context. Two traditions are combined here, both of which refer to charity, which has been received. Cf. Ahmad ibn Ḥanbal, ii, 4 ; Al-Nasā’i, v, 61 f., 69. They have no connection with the subject of criticizing others.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *Qūt al-qulūb*, i, 147.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Abū Dāwud, *Adab*, 35.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. Al-Bukhārī, *Adab*, 57 ; Muslim, v, 235 ; Abū Dāwud, *Adab*, 47 ; Ibn Māja, *Du’ā’*, 5.

with the jurists of the past, who were godly, energetic, and religious, is like the state of the poor of the present day in comparison with the saints of the past. So if they blame the poor, saying that their audition is not permissible, they do not follow the provisos of the saints of the past. They are deserving of blame for not following what the godly jurists of the past were engaged in. So if they blame others, and do the opposite of what they ought, one may apply to them [the verse], "Why do you say what you do not do ? Allāh greatly abhors that you should say what you do not do " <sup>1</sup>; and His saying (Exalted is He !), "Do you order men to be pious and forget yourselves ? " <sup>2</sup>

We close the book (Praise be to Allāh and His good help !) with a tradition which has come to us from Allāh's apostle (Allāh bless him, etc.), that he said, "When I order you to do something, do as much of it as you can." <sup>3</sup> And Allāh is the best informed.

The book is finished. Praise be to Allāh by whom the good things are completed and the blessings come down, and by whose will He has made joys perfect, and from whom are the fates of death and of life ! Praise be to Allāh alone ! And Allāh bless our master, Muhammad, his family, and his Companions, and grant peace !

<sup>1</sup> Qur. lxi, 2 f.

<sup>2</sup> Qur. ii, 41.

<sup>3</sup> Al-Nasā'i, *Hajj*, 1; Ibn Māja, *Muqaddima*, 1.

## IX

## BAWĀRIQ AL-ILMĀ‘: TEXT

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ وَصَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَى سَيِّدِنَا مُحَمَّدٍ<sup>١</sup>  
 الْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ الَّذِي أَسْعَى الْعِبَادَ فِي الْمَيَاتِقِ الْأُولَى خَطَابُ الْأَسْتَ  
 بِرِّ بَكُّمْ لِإِكْمَالِ رَتْبَةِ الْمَعَارِفِ وَكَمْلَةِ عُقُولِ الطَّلَابِ  
 لِإِدْرَاكِ فَوَائِدِ الْأَعْمَالِ وَاللَّطَائِفِ وَأَزَالَ حَبْجَ أَرْوَاحِهِمْ  
 الْمَانِعَةَ عَنِ التَّرْقِيِّ إِلَى الْجَنَابِ الْأَحْدَى بِرْفَعِ الْمَصَارِفِ  
 وَالصَّوَارِفِ وَارْقَ قَلُوبَهُمْ بِنُورِ الْيَقِينِ وَجَلَّا مَرَأَةُ نَفْوِهِمْ  
 بِقُوَّى التَّمْكِينِ حَتَّى وَجَدُوا آثَارَ التَّجَلِّيَّاتِ وَخَلَصُوا مِنْ  
 رَقِّ الشَّهْوَاتِ وَجَالَتْ أَجْسَادُهُمْ فِي السَّمَاعِ طَلْبًا لِخَلَاصِ  
 الرُّوحِ وَحِرْصًا عَلَى إِنَالَةِ جَلَائِلِ الْفَتْوَحِ فَإِنَّهَا مِنْ أَكْمَلِ  
 صَفَاتِ الرَّجُلِ الْخَائِفِ وَأَصْلَى عَلَى نَبِيِّهِ خَاتَمِ الرَّسُولِ  
 الْجَامِعِ بَيْنَ الْعَوَافِ وَالْمَعَارِفِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَعَلَى

<sup>١-٢</sup> P om.

<sup>٣</sup> قالوا بلى <sup>٤</sup> B and P finishes the quotation with.

<sup>٥</sup> وَكَمْلَةِ

<sup>٦</sup> يَرْفَعُ

<sup>٧</sup> وَأَوْدَعَ فِي قَلُوبِهِمْ مِنْ أَسْرَارِ كَلَامِهِ الرَّقِائقِ وَاللَّطَائِفِ

<sup>٨</sup> بَعْدَ الْعَوَافِ B has in small writing: <sup>٩</sup> الْعَوَافُ وَالْعَوَافُ P

<sup>١٠</sup> بِالنَّوَاضِعِ وَاللَّطَائِفِ

<sup>١١</sup> B om.

آله وأصحابه صلاة ترفع قائلها<sup>١</sup> إلى نواهي البركات  
والشرائع

يقول<sup>٢</sup> عبد الله المفتقر إلى<sup>٣</sup> إِنَّالَّهَ فِيْضٌ<sup>٤</sup> فضل الله تعالى  
الملتتجي<sup>٥</sup> إلى جناب الله أَحْمَدُ بْنُ مُحَمَّدٍ بْنُ مُحَمَّدٍ الطوسي<sup>٦</sup> الغزالى<sup>٧</sup>  
الْحَقِّهُ<sup>٨</sup> الله تعالى<sup>٩</sup> بِعِبَادِهِ الْأَبْرَارِ في دار القرار سأْلَنِي بعض  
الصالحاء المتوجّه إلى الله في<sup>٩</sup> السرّاء والضرّاء<sup>١٠</sup> أَنْ أَكْتُب  
لأجله خاصّاً وللطلّاب عامّاً رسالّة في السّماع وفوائده  
وشرّوط<sup>١١</sup> فعله لظهـور فوائده مستشهاداً عليه بالقرآن  
والحديـث وأفعال الصحابة والرد على منكريـه<sup>١٢</sup> وما يلزمـهمـ<sup>١٣</sup>  
من المحدورات شرعاً وأـستـدلـ بالكتاب والسنـةـ<sup>١٤</sup> والـمـنـقولـ<sup>١٥</sup>  
والمـقـولـ<sup>١٦</sup> على<sup>١٧</sup> أـنـ منـ قالـ إـنـ السـمـاعـ حـرـامـ مـطـلقـاـ لـرـمـهـ<sup>١٨</sup>  
الـاعـتـرـافـ<sup>١٩</sup> بـأـنـ النـبـيـ<sup>٢٠</sup> صـلـىـ اللهـ عـلـيـهـ وـسـلـمـ فـعـلـ حـرـاماـ

جـامـعـ بـيـنـ بـوـاقـيـ : ١-١ B has in small writing below :

٢-٢ عبد B . العـبـدـ الـفـقـيرـ إـلـىـ اللهـ تـعـالـىـ فـيـ P .

٤-٤ بـرـحـةـ اللهـ وـرـضـوـانـهـ بـهـ بـعـدـ بـوـاقـيـ B om .

٦-٦ بـارـ [؟ بـارـكـ] اللهـ عـلـيـهـ بـعـدـ بـوـاقـيـ B om .

٧ B om . ٨ B . بعضـ

اـهـلـ التـوـحـيدـ سـهـ [؟ بـتـ] اللهـ عـلـيـهـ بـعـدـ بـوـاقـيـ منـاهـجـ الـاستـقـامـةـ

١٠ B adds ١٢ B . فيـ المـنـامـ الـمـرـوـسـةـ P .

١٢ B . فيـ الـمـقـولـ وـالـنـقـولـ P .

١٣ B . يـلـزـمـهـ بـعـدـ بـوـاقـيـ B om .

١٤ B . لـزـمـهـ بـعـدـ بـوـاقـيـ B om .

ونظر بالحرام وأقرَّ<sup>1</sup> غيره على الحرام ومن اختلَّ<sup>2</sup> في ظنه ذلك كفر بالإجماع وسدَّت عليه طرائق<sup>3</sup> المنافع والإماع فلما رأيت صدق رغبته أجبت سؤاله وحصلت <sup>4</sup> نواله بتحرير<sup>5</sup> هذا الكتاب بعد الاستخاراة من حضرة الملك الوهاب وسميَّته بوارق الإلماع<sup>6</sup> في الرد<sup>7</sup> على من يحرِّم السماع بالإجماع وليس مورد<sup>8</sup> أن يورد على ما ذكرنا في هذا الكتاب<sup>9</sup> إلَّا بعد الإحاطة بجميع ما فيه وعند ذلك<sup>10</sup> لا يجد<sup>11</sup> للإيراد حلاً أصلًا نسأل<sup>12</sup> الله العظيم <sup>13</sup> أن ينفع<sup>14</sup> به إِنَّه قرِيب<sup>15</sup> محب<sup>16</sup>

اعلم زينَ الله قلبك بنور الطاعة وأدرجك في حقيقة الشهادة والشفاعة أَنَّ سِمَاعَ هذه الطائفة عبارة عن ملاحظة <sup>17</sup> الأُسرار الغريبة<sup>18</sup> من الأشعار الرقيقة التي ينشدُها القوّال مقرُونا<sup>19</sup> بالوَجْد<sup>20</sup> الحاصل في قلب العارف العامل

<sup>1</sup> B. وآخر <sup>2</sup> B. اختلَّ.

<sup>3</sup> In B someone has added تكبير above. طريق P.

<sup>4</sup> P. <sup>5</sup> B. <sup>6</sup> P. <sup>7</sup> والرد. <sup>8</sup> بتحريري.

<sup>9</sup> An addition in the margin of B has بالكتاب والسنَة والإجا[ع].

<sup>10</sup> P adds <sup>9</sup> B. <sup>10</sup> ان. <sup>11</sup> B. <sup>12</sup> P om. <sup>13</sup> P om. <sup>14</sup> ينتفع P.

<sup>15</sup> B. <sup>16</sup> B. <sup>17</sup> P. <sup>18</sup> الأشعار التزلية. <sup>19</sup> بـنشدُها B.

<sup>20</sup> B. <sup>21</sup> بـمقرُونا B.

والمريد<sup>¹</sup> الكامل يحملهم<sup>²</sup> على خلع العذار والانجداب<sup>³</sup> الى  
جناب<sup>⁴</sup> الواحد الفهار والاطلاع على الرقائق<sup>⁵</sup> والأسرار  
وإنما اختاروا لرفع<sup>⁶</sup> هذه الحجب السماع بالأصوات  
الحسنة في معظم الاوقات<sup>⁷</sup> بعد أداء<sup>⁸</sup> المأمورات لأنّ  
¹ طبيعة الإنسان مائة الى الصوت غريزة لاجتلاف<sup>⁹</sup>  
منافعه ودفع المضار بواسطته فلما<sup>¹¹</sup> حصلت<sup>¹²</sup> فيه زيادة  
¹³ ترتيبات<sup>¹⁴</sup> نغمية<sup>¹⁵</sup> ومناسبات روحية المسماة<sup>¹⁶</sup> بالموسيقى  
¹⁷ آثرتها على ما سواه فإذا سمع الإنسان<sup>¹⁷</sup> المناسبات النغمية  
المتضمنة المعاني الذوقية والحقائق التوحيدية مال الوجود  
¹⁸ الى تلك<sup>¹⁸</sup> بأسرها وأخذ كلّ عضو<sup>¹⁹</sup> حظه على الانفراد  
¹⁹ فالسمع لطائف المناسبات المطلقة<sup>²⁰</sup> والبصر مناسبات  
الحركات والقلب لطائف المعاني والعقل وجدان المناسبات

¹. والمريد B.

². يحملهم B.

³. بالانجداب P.

⁴. جناب B.

⁵. الدقائق P.

⁶. P. تلّرفع. The correction may have been intended to affect only one *lām*.

⁷. الاوقات B.

⁸-⁹. بعداد P.

¹⁰. غريزه B.

¹⁰. الاجتلاف P.

¹¹. فلما B.

¹². حصل P.

¹³. ترتيبات P adds.

¹⁴. ترتيبات B.

¹⁵. الاسمي B.

¹⁵. نغميه B.

¹⁶. الاسمي P.

¹⁷. الانسان B.

¹⁸. ملك B.

¹⁹. ماسره P adds.

²⁰. بـ om.

²¹. ماسات B.

المطلقة وعند اجتماع الأعضاء على الأمور الملائمة<sup>١</sup> يرتفع  
 حكم التنافر ويظهر حكم التوافق<sup>٢</sup> والتنافر من الظلمة<sup>٣</sup>  
 والتوافق<sup>٤</sup> من النور وعند ارتفاع الظلمة<sup>٥</sup> وانبساط النور  
 ينكشف أمور وحقائق لا يوصل إليها بألف اجتهاد  
 ولا بد لمثل هذا السمع من الزمان والمكان<sup>٦</sup>  
 والإخوان أمّا الزمان ففي أوقات صفاء قلوبهم<sup>٧</sup> ومحاولتهم  
 الاجتماع طبّال الرضى<sup>٨</sup> محبوبهم<sup>٩</sup> وتجريد<sup>١٠</sup> ظاهرهم عن الحظوظ  
 النفسانية وتفريج<sup>١١</sup> باطنهم<sup>١٢</sup> عن التعلق<sup>١٣</sup> بطلب الدرجات  
 وتحصيل المقامات وتوحيد<sup>١٤</sup> أسرارهم<sup>١٥</sup> عند ورود النفحات  
 فإذا اجتمعوا في مثل هذا الزمان انعكست أنوار قلوب  
 البعض إلى قلوب آخرين فيزدادوا<sup>١٦</sup> بذلك الاجتماع نورا  
 وظهوراً ووضوهاً وحبوراً  
 وأمّا المكان فكالزوابيا<sup>١٧</sup> والخوانق<sup>١٨</sup> والمساجد أولى<sup>١٩</sup>  
 إذ المسجد بني لعبادة الجسد والقلب مخلوق للمعرفة

<sup>١</sup> B الملايى.

<sup>٢-٣</sup> P om. ; B المطلقة.

<sup>٤</sup> P والتبادر.

<sup>٤</sup> B الطلة.

<sup>٥</sup> B adds والا.

<sup>٦</sup> B قلوبهم.

<sup>٧-٨</sup> B ناطنهم.

<sup>٩</sup> B محبوبهم ; طلب الرضى.

<sup>٩</sup> B وتجريد.

<sup>٩</sup> B فيزداد.

<sup>١٠</sup> B كالزوابيا ; مكالزوابيا.

<sup>١٠</sup> B والخوانق.

<sup>١٠</sup> P om.

<sup>١١</sup> B اذا.

وظهور <sup>1</sup> الله تعالى <sup>2</sup> فيه كا ورد في الخبر <sup>3</sup> لا يسعني <sup>4</sup> أرضي  
 ولا سمائي <sup>5</sup> ولكن يسعني <sup>6</sup> قلب عبدي المؤمن وهو مهبط  
 الأنوار الإلهية فإذا تحرك صاحب القلب في المسجد  
 لازدياد نور قلبه وصفاء نفسه كان أولى من تحريك جسد  
<sup>8</sup> غيره بالصلوة الجسدية من غير <sup>7</sup> الحضور ولا خلاف  
 أن <sup>9</sup> من دخل المسجد واستغل بالصلوة الصوريّة <sup>10</sup> وكان  
 قلبه مشحونا <sup>11</sup> من الوسواس والتخيلات والأمور التي  
 نهى الشارع عنها وكان ساعيا في إزالة تلك <sup>12</sup> الموانع عن  
<sup>13</sup> قلبه ما يمنع دخول المسجد أصلا بل أبلغ <sup>13</sup> من ذلك  
 محقق دخول ظالم <sup>14</sup> فاجر آكل الحرام المسجد <sup>15</sup> وعلم  
 بالقرائن أن <sup>16</sup> قلبه مشتغل بالفكرة <sup>17</sup> في مظالم الناس وأخذ  
 أموالهم واستغل بالصلوة <sup>18</sup> صورة لا يمنع دخوله فكيف  
 يمنع لمن يروم طهارة نفسه وجلاء قلبه وصفاء روحه بسماع  
<sup>20</sup> غرائب الكلام وإدراك لطائف الأشعار الموجبة لثبوت

<sup>1</sup> B. فظهور.	<sup>2</sup> P. om.	<sup>3</sup> B. الخبر.	<sup>4</sup> B. يسعني.
<sup>5</sup> B. سمواتي.	<sup>6</sup> B. يسعني.	<sup>7</sup> B. غير.	<sup>8</sup> B. حلاف.
<sup>9</sup> B. بالصلوة.	<sup>10</sup> B. الصوريّة.	<sup>11</sup> B. مشحونا.	<sup>12</sup> B. ملك.
<sup>13-12</sup> B. بذلك.	<sup>14</sup> B. ظالم.	<sup>15</sup> P. المجد.	<sup>16</sup> P. بالكرة.
<sup>17</sup> B. بالصلوة.	<sup>18</sup> P. من.	<sup>19</sup> B. غرائب.	<sup>20</sup> B. ثبوت.

نسبة مع الملائكة وقطع نسبة مع الأباء <sup>١</sup> فإذا اجتمع  
<sup>٣</sup> أهل الصفاء في مقام العبادة وأرادوا <sup>٢</sup> اتصال صفاء قلوب  
 البعض إلى البعض وازيدوا <sup>٤</sup> نوارهم وتكثير <sup>٤</sup> صفاء نفوسهم  
 تأييدهم نفوسهم بنور ذلك المكان وازيدوا <sup>٥</sup> أحواهم  
<sup>٩</sup> وتكملت <sup>٥</sup> ذواتهم <sup>٦</sup> إذ كل <sup>٧</sup> مكان <sup>٨</sup> بني للعبادة تعلق به  
<sup>١٠</sup> روح ونور من عالم الغيب وازيدوا حرمة وإجلالا  
<sup>١٣</sup> كالأصطفيل <sup>١٢</sup> فإنه إذا جعل مسجدا <sup>١١</sup> تعلق به <sup>١٢</sup> التعظيم  
 والإجلال <sup>١٤</sup> أوصار محلا <sup>١٤</sup> للملائكة <sup>١٤</sup> بعد ما كان محل  
<sup>١٥</sup> النجاسة والشياطين فالقعود فيه وهو مسجد يورث  
<sup>١٨</sup> تنوير الباطن قال <sup>١٨</sup> النبي <sup>١٧</sup> صلى الله عليه وسلم المسجد  
<sup>١٦</sup> بيت كل <sup>١٦</sup> تقي

وأمّا الإخوان فهم على ثلاثة أقسام إخوان الاسم  
<sup>١٩</sup> أي المشتركون <sup>٢٠</sup> في اسم الإيمان قال الله تعالى إنما  
<sup>٢٤</sup> المؤمنون إخوة فهو لا <sup>٢٣</sup> لا تجوز <sup>٢١</sup> مصاحبتهم دائمًا

<sup>١</sup> P. النسبة.

<sup>٢</sup> P. وارادة.

<sup>٣</sup> B. وتكثير.

<sup>٤</sup> B. تألفت.

<sup>٥</sup> P. ذواتهم.

<sup>٦</sup> P. مكانتها.

<sup>٦</sup> B. وجلاة.

<sup>٧</sup> P. مسجد.

<sup>٧-٨</sup> B. ادخل.

<sup>٩</sup> B. Addit. in C.

<sup>٩</sup> B. مسجد.

<sup>٩</sup> B. عال.

<sup>١٠</sup> B. عليه السلام.

<sup>١٠</sup> P. المشتركون.

<sup>١٠</sup> B. om.

<sup>١٨-١٩</sup> B. om.

<sup>٢٣</sup> Following C. B.

<sup>٢٤</sup> P. بجوز.

<sup>٢٢</sup> P. om.

<sup>٢٥</sup> Following C. B.

<sup>٢٤</sup> P. صحبتهم.

بل <sup>١</sup> يصعبون لحنة <sup>٢</sup> لِفَادِتِهِمْ ما ينتفعون به <sup>٣</sup> وإخوان  
 الإِرادة والمحبة كالعوام المعينين لهم <sup>٤</sup> بِعَالِمٍ ونقوسهم على  
 تحصيل طرق الصفاء فهؤلاء وإن لم يكونوا متصفين  
 بأوصافهم <sup>٥</sup> جازت <sup>٦</sup> مصاحبتهم فإِنَّهُم بِقُوَّةِ الإِرادة  
 والصدق يكتسبون من أنوار قلوب أهل الصفاء كما  
 يكتسب الشمع اللين من حرّ الشمس فإذا رجعوا إلى  
 العوام انتفع غيرهم بهم <sup>٧</sup> وإخوان الصفاء والمواجيد والمعارف  
 والتفاريد والذوق والشوق والكمال فهؤلاء هم الإخوان  
 بالحقيقة

فإِذَا اجتمع الزمان والمَكَانُ والإِخْرَانُ وَجَبَ السَّمَاعُ  
 لأهل الرُّفَانِ والكمال والصفاء والوصال كَمَا يحب <sup>٨</sup> مسافرة  
 الجاهل إلى العالم ليعلم <sup>٩</sup> منار الدين ويندب <sup>١٠</sup> في حقّ  
 المريدين <sup>١١</sup> ومباح <sup>١٢</sup> في حقّ المحبتين تشبّهها بأهل الصفاء  
 والكمال في حركاتهم وسكناتهم قال النبي <sup>١٣</sup> صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ  
 وَسَلَّمَ <sup>١٤</sup> من تشبّه بِقَوْمٍ فَهُوَ مِنْهُمْ وَمَنْ أَحْبَبَ قَوْمًا حَسْرَ مِنْهُمْ

<sup>١</sup> بِأَوْصَافِهِمْ <sup>٤</sup> بِعَالِمٍ <sup>٢</sup> لَمَعَةٌ <sup>٤</sup> بِعَالِمٍ <sup>٣</sup> بِعَالِمٍ

<sup>٥</sup> بَحْسٌ <sup>٦</sup> بِجَازَ <sup>٧</sup> بِعَالِمٍ <sup>٨</sup> بِالْمَفَارِيدِ <sup>٩</sup> بِعَالِمٍ

<sup>٩</sup> بِعَالِمٍ <sup>١٠</sup> بِعَالِمٍ <sup>١١</sup> بِعَالِمٍ <sup>١٢</sup> بِمَبَاحٍ <sup>١٣</sup> صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

<sup>١٤</sup> بِعَالِمٍ <sup>١٤-١٤</sup> بِعَالِمٍ <sup>١٤</sup> بِعَالِمٍ

وقال<sup>١</sup> الله<sup>٢</sup> تعالى يأيها<sup>٣</sup> الذين آمنوا اتقوا<sup>٤</sup> الله وكونوا<sup>٥</sup> مع الصادقين أي إن لم تكونوا<sup>٦</sup> منهم فكونوا معهم وقال<sup>٧</sup> تعالى ولو علم الله<sup>٨</sup> فيهم خيراً لأسمعهم أي الحق والحكمة والمواعظ والزواجر قوله<sup>٩</sup> أسمعهم أعم من أئن يكون قرآناً أو حديثاً أو أشعاراً أو غير ذلك<sup>١٠</sup> وقال<sup>١١</sup> صلّى الله عليه وسلم<sup>١٢</sup> إن من الشعر لحكمة فن لم يعلم الله<sup>١٣</sup> به خيراً فلا يسمعه الحكمة والمعرفة والمواعظ والزواجر فلا يسمعه حيئند الخير والحق من الأشعار في الساع ومن لم<sup>١٤</sup> يجد شيئاً من الحق والحكمة والفوائد من أمر<sup>١٥</sup> أنكره<sup>١٦</sup> فيئند يكون الإِنكار<sup>١٧</sup> على نفسه وفي<sup>١٨</sup> إنكار سمع الغناء<sup>١٩</sup> سمع ضرب الدف<sup>٢٠</sup> والأصوات الحسنة مخالفة السنة<sup>٢١</sup> واعتقاد<sup>٢٢</sup> تحريرها<sup>٢٣</sup> كفر والإِعراض والانتهاء<sup>٢٤</sup> عنها فسوق<sup>٢٥</sup> ورد في البخاري ومسلم عن الريّع بنت معوذ<sup>٢٦</sup> بن عفراه قالت جاء النبي<sup>٢٧</sup> صلّى الله عليه وسلم<sup>٢٨</sup> وجلس

<sup>١</sup> B. ومال.<sup>٢</sup> B. om.<sup>٣</sup> B. يا لها P ; يأيها P.<sup>٤</sup> اتقوا B.<sup>٥</sup> B. يكونوا.<sup>٦</sup> P. adds الله.<sup>٧</sup> P. om.<sup>٨</sup> قوله B.<sup>٩</sup> B. حديثاً.<sup>١٠-١١</sup> B. وغير.<sup>١٢-١٣</sup> عليه السلام B. عليه السلام.<sup>١٢</sup> B. علم.<sup>١٣</sup> P. غير.<sup>١٤</sup> B. لا.<sup>١٥</sup> P. والفرائد.<sup>١٦</sup> B. الإنكار.<sup>١٧</sup> P. النّاثا.<sup>١٨</sup> P. ومخالفة السنة.<sup>١٩</sup> P. للسنة B. adds.<sup>١٩</sup> B. اعتقدا.<sup>٢٠</sup> B. تحريرها.<sup>٢١</sup> P. والانتهاء.<sup>٢٢</sup> B. فسوق.<sup>٢٣</sup> P. الريّعة.<sup>٢٤</sup> B. مسعود P ; مسعود.<sup>٢٥</sup> B. من.

على فراشي وعندي جويريات يضربن بالدف ويندين<sup>2</sup>  
 من قتل من آبائي يوم بدر فقلت إحداهن وفينا<sup>3</sup>  
 نبي يعلم ما في غد فقال صلى الله عليه وسلم دعي<sup>4</sup>  
 هذا وقولي ما كنت تقولين وكان الشعر بيت<sup>5</sup>  
 تقارب أقوام ببرقة سهم<sup>6</sup>  
 بضرب وطعن والسيوف المهند<sup>7</sup>  
 فعدلت إحداهن إلى قوتها وفينانبي يعلم<sup>15</sup>  
 ما في غد فهذا الحديث دال على أنه صلى<sup>16</sup>  
 الله عليه وسلم سمع صوت الدف والغناء والشعر من<sup>17</sup>

<sup>1</sup> This reading follows the text given in Al-Bukhārī. B ; جويريان يضران يضربان ; جويريانان C has , جويريان يضران but thereafter pl. is used. The fact that B and P have the masc. in the dual of the vb. suggests that the original had 3 pl. fem. and that the *alif* has been inserted.

<sup>2</sup> B and P ويندبان .

<sup>3</sup> C and P om. In B it was originally omitted, but has been added by a later hand.

<sup>4</sup> B اباين P اباين C also has اباين. Text follows Al-Bukhārī.

<sup>5</sup> P repeats. بدر B . احداها B . غدا P .

<sup>6</sup> P adds النبي Al-Bukhārī om. B om.

<sup>11</sup> B كتني. There are a number of slight variations from Al-Bukhārī's text. I have followed his reading only in important words, as the author was probably simply quoting from memory, and would be more interested in recording the incident than in considering verbal accuracy.

<sup>12</sup> B وفينا الذي تقول نيت P om. and adds .

<sup>14-14</sup> P احداها P ; وطعن يضرب من سيف المهند P .

<sup>16</sup> P والحديث P . غدا P om.

الجويريات<sup>1</sup> التي<sup>2</sup> لهن<sup>3</sup> حالة تحرير<sup>4</sup> سماع أصواتهن<sup>5</sup> في  
الكبر من غير حاجة وهو<sup>6</sup> صلّى الله عليه وسلم حاضر<sup>7</sup>  
يصفى<sup>8</sup> إليهن<sup>9</sup> فأذن سماع الغناء وصوت الدف<sup>10</sup> من  
الرجل<sup>11</sup> بطريق<sup>12</sup> الأولى فكيف<sup>13</sup> وقد أمر الجويرية<sup>14</sup>  
بالغناء شعراً وضرب الدف<sup>15</sup> حيث قال قولي ما كنت<sup>16</sup>  
تقولين

والأمر للوجوب إذا تجرد عن القراءن كقوله تعالى<sup>17</sup>  
أقيموا<sup>18</sup> الصلوة أو للندب<sup>19</sup> كقوله تعالى<sup>20</sup> فكاتبواهم إن علمتم  
فيهم خيراً أو للا<sup>21</sup> باحة كقوله تعالى<sup>22</sup> وإذا حللتكم فاصطادوا  
وها هنا<sup>23</sup> يتحمل الوجوب لأن<sup>24</sup>ه صلّى الله عليه وسلم أمرها<sup>25</sup>  
مشافهة<sup>26</sup> بـأعادة<sup>27</sup> ما كانت تقوله<sup>28</sup> وهو مصنف<sup>29</sup> إلى معانيه  
إذا طلب صلّى الله عليه وسلم شيئاً مصفيها<sup>30</sup> إلى معناه

<sup>1</sup> B. الجويريتين P. ; الجويريات

<sup>2</sup> P. اللتين.

<sup>3</sup> تحرر B.

<sup>4</sup> P adds كونه.

<sup>5</sup> P. حاضراً.

<sup>6</sup> P. يسفي.

<sup>7</sup> P has as explanatory note in margin صاحب الوجد.

<sup>8</sup> I have retained this form here and in other places where it occurs, although بالطريق is the more normal form. But on p. 136 I read بالطريق as it occurs there in P.

<sup>9</sup> B. فكيف.

<sup>10</sup> P. الجويريتان.

<sup>11</sup> B. كنني.

<sup>12</sup> B. om.

<sup>13</sup> B. واقيموا.

<sup>14-15</sup> P. والندب.

<sup>15</sup> B. om.

<sup>16</sup> B. om.

<sup>17</sup> B. هنا.

<sup>18</sup> P. الجواب.

<sup>19</sup> P repeats.

<sup>20</sup> P. مستفاهمة.

<sup>21</sup> B. بـأعادة.

<sup>22</sup> P. عليه من القول.

<sup>23</sup> P. مصنفي.

وَجَبٌ ذِكْرُهُ كَقُولَهُ تَعَالَى يَأْتِيهَا<sup>١</sup> الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا اسْتَجِبُوا  
 لِلَّهِ وَلِرَسُولِهِ إِذَا دَعَاكُمْ وَمُتَابِعَتِهِ وَاجِبَةٌ لَقُولَهُ تَعَالَى  
<sup>٢</sup> قُلْ إِنْ كُنْتُمْ تَحْبَّونَ اللَّهَ فَاتَّبِعُونِي<sup>٣</sup> وَاسْتَدْعَاءُ قُولِ الْمَعْنَى  
 قُولًا غَنَاءً لَيْسَ بِوَاجِبٍ إِجْمَاعًا فَبَقِيَ عَلَى الْإِبَاحةِ لَقُولِهِ  
 تَعَالَى لَقَدْ كَانَ لَكُمْ فِي رَسُولِ اللَّهِ أُسْوَةً حَسَنَةً وَقَالُوا فِي  
 أُصُولِ الْفَقَهِ فَعْلَهُ الْمُجْرَدُ يَدْلِلُ عَلَى الْإِبَاحةِ عِنْدَ مَالِكٍ وَعِنْ  
<sup>٤</sup> النَّدْبِ عِنْدَ الشَّافِعِيِّ<sup>٥</sup> وَعَلَى الْوَجْبِ عِنْدَ ابْنِ سَرِيجٍ<sup>٦</sup>  
<sup>٧</sup> وَأَبْنِي سَعِيدٍ الْأَصْطَخْرِيِّ<sup>٨</sup> وَابْنِ خِيرَانَ<sup>٩</sup> اسْتَدَلَ قَائِلٌ  
 الْإِبَاحةَ بِأَنَّ فَعْلَهُ عَلَيْهِ السَّلَامُ لَا يَكْرَهُ وَلَا يَحْرُمُ وَالْأُصْلَلُ  
<sup>١٠</sup> عَدْمُ الْوَجْبِ وَالنَّدْبِ<sup>١١</sup> إِلَّا بِقَرِينَةٍ<sup>١٢</sup> وَلَا قَرِينَةً فَبَقِيَ<sup>١٣</sup>  
<sup>١٤</sup> عَلَى الْإِبَاحةِ قَلَنَا النَّاَلِبُ عَلَى فَعْلَهُ الْوَجْبِ وَالنَّدْبِ وَاسْتَدَلَ<sup>١٥</sup>  
<sup>١٦</sup> الْقَائِلُ بِالنَّدْبِ بِقُولِهِ تَعَالَى لَقَدْ كَانَ لَكُمْ فِي رَسُولِ اللَّهِ<sup>١٧</sup>  
 أُسْوَةً حَسَنَةً وَذَلِكَ يَدْلِلُ عَلَى الرَّجْحَانَ<sup>١٨</sup> وَالْأُصْلَلُ عَدْمُ<sup>١٩</sup>  
<sup>٢٠</sup> الْوَجْبِ إِلَّا بِقَرِينَةٍ<sup>٢١</sup> وَلَا قَرِينَةً فَبَقِيَ عَلَى النَّدْبِ وَاسْتَدَلَ<sup>٢٢</sup>  
<sup>٢٣</sup> وَذَلِكَ يَدْلِلُ عَلَى الرَّجْحَانَ<sup>٢٤</sup> وَالْأُصْلَلُ عَدْمُ<sup>٢٥</sup>

<sup>١</sup> B. <sup>٢</sup> B om. <sup>٣</sup> بِيَا إِلَيْهَا P. <sup>٤</sup> بِيَا إِلَيْهَا B.

<sup>٥</sup> P. <sup>٦</sup> بِكَقُولَهُ P. <sup>٧</sup> فَاتَّبِعُونَ P.

<sup>٨</sup> بِشَرْنَخٍ P. <sup>٩</sup> سَرِيجٍ B.

<sup>١٠</sup> B om. <sup>١١</sup> B. <sup>١٢</sup> B. <sup>١٣</sup> بِمَا يَدْلِلُ عَلَى P.

<sup>١٤</sup> P. <sup>١٥</sup> بِحِيرَانَ P. <sup>١٦</sup> بِالْأَصْطَخْرِيِّ P.

<sup>١٧</sup> P. <sup>١٨</sup> بِرَجْحَانَ P. <sup>١٩</sup> بِقَرِينَةٍ P. <sup>٢٠</sup> P om.

<sup>٢١</sup> B om. <sup>٢٢</sup> بِذَلِكَ P. <sup>٢٣</sup> وَالْأُصْلَلُ عَدْمٌ.

<sup>٢٤</sup> بِلَقْوَلِهِ P. <sup>٢٥</sup> بِرَجْحَانَ B.

<sup>٤</sup> بِيَا إِلَيْهَا P. <sup>٥</sup> بِيَا إِلَيْهَا B.

<sup>٦</sup> بِكَقُولَهُ P. <sup>٧</sup> فَاتَّبِعُونَ P.

<sup>٨</sup> بِشَرْنَخٍ P. <sup>٩</sup> سَرِيجٍ B.

<sup>١٠</sup> B. <sup>١١</sup> B. <sup>١٢</sup> B. <sup>١٣</sup> بِمَا يَدْلِلُ عَلَى P.

<sup>١٤</sup> P. <sup>١٥</sup> بِحِيرَانَ P. <sup>١٦</sup> بِالْأَصْطَخْرِيِّ P.

<sup>١٧</sup> P. <sup>١٨</sup> بِرَجْحَانَ P. <sup>١٩</sup> بِقَرِينَةٍ P. <sup>٢٠</sup> P om.

<sup>٢١</sup> B om. <sup>٢٢</sup> بِذَلِكَ P. <sup>٢٣</sup> وَالْأُصْلَلُ عَدْمٌ.

<sup>٢٤</sup> بِلَقْوَلِهِ P. <sup>٢٥</sup> بِرَجْحَانَ B.

القائل بالوجوب بقوله تعالى قل <sup>2</sup> إِن كُنْتُمْ تَحْبِطُونَ اللَّهَ  
 فَاتَّبِعُونِي <sup>3</sup> يَحْبِبُكُمُ اللَّهُ وَمَا <sup>4</sup> أَتَاكُمُ الرَّسُولُ فَخُذُوهُ  
 وَاجْتَمَعَتِ <sup>5</sup> الصَّحَابَةُ عَلَى <sup>6</sup> وَجْبِ <sup>7</sup> الْفَسْلِ بِالْتَّقَاءِ <sup>8</sup> الْخَتَانِينَ  
 لِقُولِ <sup>9</sup> عَائِشَةَ أُمَّ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ <sup>10</sup> رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهَا فَعَلْتُهُ <sup>11</sup> أَنَا  
 وَرَسُولُ اللَّهِ فَاغْتَسَلْنَا <sup>12</sup> مَعَ اتْفَاقِ <sup>13</sup> الصَّحَابَةِ عَلَى <sup>14</sup> عَدَمِ  
 الْفَسْلِ وَقَتِ الْمَبَاشِرَةِ بِغَيْرِ الْإِنْزَالِ تَمْسَكَا بِقَوْلِهِ <sup>15</sup> صَلَّى  
 اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ إِنَّمَا المَاءُ مِنَ الْمَاءِ وَفِي هَذِهِ الصُّورَةِ فَقَدْ  
 سَمِعَ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ <sup>16</sup> صَوْتَ الدَّفِّ وَالْفَنَاءِ وَاسْتَعَادَ  
 فَكَانَ عَلَى قَوْلِ بَعْضِ <sup>17</sup> الْأَصْوَلِيَّينَ <sup>18</sup> وَاجْبَا <sup>19</sup> وَعَلَى قَوْلِ  
 الْبَعْضِ نَدِبَا <sup>20</sup> وَعَلَى قَوْلِ الْبَعْضِ مِبَاحَا وَلَمْ يَقُلْ أَحَدٌ بِالْحَرَمَةِ  
 مَنْ قَالَ إِنَّ سَمَاعَ <sup>21</sup> الْفَنَاءِ <sup>22</sup> وَصَوْتَ الدَّفِّ <sup>23</sup> حِرَامٌ حِرَامٌ  
 الْوَجْبُ <sup>24</sup> أَوِ النَّدْبُ <sup>25</sup> أَوِ الْإِبَاحةُ فَيُلْحِقُهُ إِنْمَّا عَظِيمٌ

<sup>1</sup> P. لِقَوْلِهِ. <sup>2</sup> P om. <sup>3</sup> فَاتَّبِعُونِي P. <sup>4</sup> B. مَا.  
<sup>5</sup> B. اغْتَسَلْنَا. <sup>6</sup> P. فَخُذُوهُ. <sup>7</sup> B. وَاجْتَمَعَتِ. <sup>8</sup> B. repeats.  
<sup>9</sup> B. أُمَّ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ. <sup>10</sup> B. مَالِقَةً. <sup>11</sup> B. الْخَتَانِينَ. <sup>12-13</sup> P om. B. وَجْبُ.  
<sup>13-14</sup> B om. <sup>14</sup> P. فَعَلْتُهُ. Text follows Ibn Māja, *Tayammum*, 21.  
<sup>15</sup> P. عَلَيْهِ السَّلَامُ. <sup>16</sup> P adds. بَعْضٌ. <sup>17-17</sup> B. عَلَيْهِ السَّلَامُ.  
<sup>18</sup> B adds. سَمَاعٌ. <sup>19</sup> P. وَالْأَشْعَارُ. <sup>20</sup> B. الْبَعْضُ.  
<sup>21</sup> B. الْأَصْوَلِيَّنَ. <sup>22</sup> P. وَاجْبَا. <sup>23</sup> P. السَّمَاعُ.  
<sup>24</sup> P. وَالْفَنَاءُ. <sup>25</sup> B. الْوَاجِبُ.

وروى البخاري ومسلم عن عائشة رضي الله عنها  
أنّها قالت دخل عليها أبو بكر رضي الله تعالى عنه  
وعندها جويريتان<sup>٤</sup> تضرّبان<sup>٥</sup> بالدفت وفي رواية<sup>٦</sup> تقتيلان  
بما تقاولت به<sup>٧</sup> الأنصار يوم بعاث<sup>٨</sup> والنبي<sup>٩</sup> صلّى الله عليه  
وسلم<sup>١٠</sup> تغشى<sup>١١</sup> بشوبه<sup>١٢</sup> فانتهراً<sup>١٣</sup> أبو بكر رضي الله تعالى عنه  
عن<sup>١٤</sup> فكشف النبي<sup>١٥</sup> صلّى الله عليه وسلم<sup>١٦</sup> عن وجهه<sup>١٧</sup> وقال  
دعهما يا أبا<sup>١٨</sup> بكر فإنّها أيام عيد<sup>١٩</sup> وهذا الحديث  
بصراحته دالٌّ على جواز سماع الدفت<sup>٢٠</sup> والفناء وحضورهما  
والردة على منكريهما<sup>٢١</sup> وفيه بيان<sup>٢٢</sup> على زجر المنكر ودفعه  
عن الإنكار<sup>٢٣</sup> لأنّه صلّى الله عليه وسلم<sup>٢٤</sup> نهى<sup>٢٥</sup> عن  
الإنكار<sup>٢٦</sup> عليه فن قال إن سماع<sup>٢٧</sup> الفناء حرام وضرب<sup>٢٨</sup>  
الدفت<sup>٢٩</sup> حرام وحضورهما حرام فكان<sup>٣٠</sup> قال إن النبي<sup>٣١</sup>  
صلّى الله عليه وسلم<sup>٣٢</sup> سمع حراماً ومنع الناهي<sup>٣٣</sup> عن الحرام  
ومن اعتقد ذلك<sup>٣٤</sup> كفر بالاتفاق<sup>٣٥</sup>

١ B عاشه.	٢ P adds	٣-٤ B om.	٤ B جو، رشان
٥ B يضرمان P، تصریمان	٦ B رواهہ	٧ B	٨ P om.
٩ B الاصمار.	١٠ B بُغاث	١١ B شوہہ	١٢-١٣ B om.
١٤ B ووجهہ	١٥ B يام	١٦ B عدد	١٧ B حواز
١٨ P الساع.	١٩ P اللدف	٢٠ B منکرہما	٢١ B بيان
٢٢ B الانکار	٢٣ P على	٢٤ P الساع	٢٥ P والفتا
٢٧ P om.	٢٨ P فانہ	٢٩ P المناہی	٣٠ B مالاتفاق

فَإِنْ قِيلَ يَحْوِزُ هَذَا فِي يَوْمِ عِيدٍ لَا فِي غَيْرِهِ لِأَنَّهُ  
 صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَيَّدَ جَوَازَهُ بِيَوْمٍ عِيدٍ وَبَهْ قَالَ  
 أَحْمَدُ بْنُ حَنْبَلَ قَلَّا إِنَّ الْاَتَّفَاقَ عَلَى أَنَّ خَصُوصَ السَّبَبِ  
 لَا يَعْنِي عَمُومَ الْحَكْمِ كَقُولَهُ تَعَالَى إِنَّ الَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا  
 سَوَاءٌ عَلَيْهِمْ أَنْدَرُهُمْ أَمْ لَمْ تَنْدِرُهُمْ لَا يُؤْمِنُونَ نَزَّلَتْ فِي  
 حَقٍّ أَبِي جَهَنَّمَ وَأَبِي لَهَبٍ وَعَتْبَةَ وَشَيْبَةَ وَعَبْدَ اللَّهِ  
 ابْنَ سَلَوْلَ وَالْحَكْمُ عَامٌ فِي حَقِّ جَمِيعِ الْكُفَّارِ وَفِي  
 الْحَدِيثِ الْمَذْكُورِ دَلَالَةٌ عَلَى أَنَّ كُلَّ حَالَةٍ مَشْرُوَّةٍ يَكُونُ  
 فِيهَا فَرَحَ الْقَلْبُ وَطَبِيعَةُ<sup>14</sup> الْبَاطِنِ فِي أَيَّامِ الْعِبَادَةِ<sup>13</sup> وَغَيْرُهَا  
 جَازَ فِيهَا السَّمَاعُ بِالدَّفَّ وَالْفَنَاءِ وَالْأَشْعَارِ  
 وَفِي مَسْنَدِ أَحْمَدَ أَنَّ الْحَبْشَةَ كَانُوا يَدْفَقُونَ<sup>17</sup> بَيْنَ يَدِيِ  
 رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَيَرْقَصُونَ<sup>18</sup> وَيَقُولُونَ مُحَمَّدٌ  
 عَبْدُ صَالِحٍ فَقَالَ<sup>20</sup> صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ مَا يَقُولُونَ قَالُوا

<sup>1</sup> بـ P. <sup>2</sup> بـ P. <sup>3</sup> بـ P. <sup>4</sup> العِيدُ P. <sup>5</sup> يَحْوِزُ P.

<sup>6</sup> P adds which is appropriate only for a companion of the Prophet. If some such phrase is to be added, رَحْمَةُ اللَّهِ عَنْهُ would be more suitable.

<sup>7</sup> بـ P. <sup>8</sup> عَلَيْهِمْ P. <sup>9</sup> تَنْدِرُهُمْ B. <sup>10</sup> وَشَيْبَةُ P.

<sup>11</sup> بـ P adds لَعْنَهُمْ اللَّهُ تَعَالَى B. <sup>12</sup> جَمِيعُ P. <sup>13</sup> الْعَلَوْبُ B.

<sup>14</sup> بـ P. <sup>15</sup> فَهَا B. <sup>16</sup> بـ P. <sup>17</sup> يَدْفَقُونَ P. <sup>18</sup> وَيَرْقَصُونَ P.

<sup>19</sup> بـ P adds رَسُولُ اللَّهِ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ B. <sup>20</sup> قَالُوا P.

يقولون محمد عبد صالح وهذا الحديث<sup>٢</sup> بصراحته يدلّ<sup>١</sup>  
 على جواز حضور الرقص وجواز سماع صوت<sup>٣</sup> الدف<sup>٤</sup>  
 والفناء فن قال إنّ الرقص حرام وضرب الدف<sup>٤</sup> والفناء  
 حرام<sup>٥</sup> كان ذلك اعترافاً منه أنّ النبيَّ صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ  
 وسَلَّمَ حضر الحرام<sup>٦</sup> وأقرَّ غيره<sup>٧</sup> على الحرام<sup>٨</sup> ومن  
<sup>٩</sup> اخْتَلَجَ<sup>١٠</sup> في ظنّه ذلك<sup>٩</sup> كفر بالاتفاق<sup>١٠</sup>

فإن قال المنكر إذا كان هذا جائز في حق النبيَّ  
 صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وسَلَّمَ فلم<sup>١١</sup> قلتم إنّه<sup>١٢</sup> جائز في حقنا<sup>١٢</sup> قلنا  
 الدليل على جوازه أنه<sup>١٣</sup> صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وسَلَّمَ شارع ولا  
 يجوز<sup>١٤</sup> للشارع أن يكتتم أمرًا فيه حكم شرعي<sup>١٥</sup> لقوله  
 تعالى<sup>١٦</sup> إنَّ الَّذِينَ يَكْتُمُونَ مَا أَنْزَلْنَا مِنَ الْبَيِّنَاتِ<sup>١٧</sup> والهدى  
 من بعد ما يَتَنَاهُ النَّاسُ فِي الْكِتَابِ<sup>١٨</sup> أَوْلَئِكَ يَلْعَنُهُمُ اللهُ  
 ويلعنهم<sup>١٩</sup> اللاعنون ولقوله تعالى<sup>٢٠</sup> وَإِذَا أَخْذَ اللَّهَ مِثْقَالَ الَّذِينَ

<sup>١</sup> P. فهذا.	<sup>٢</sup> P. حديث.	<sup>٣</sup> P. om.	<sup>٤-٤</sup> P. حرام والفناء.
<sup>٤</sup> P. واقر المعم على غيره	<sup>٥</sup> P. حراما.	<sup>٦</sup> P. غيره	<sup>٧</sup> B. عيره.
<sup>٧</sup> P. بالاتفاق	<sup>٨</sup> P. ذلك في ظنه	<sup>٩</sup> P. احتلخ	<sup>١١</sup> P. علم.
<sup>٩</sup> P. adds. غير.	<sup>١٢</sup> P. في حقه.	<sup>١٣</sup> P. لا.	<sup>١٥</sup> B. بجوز.
<sup>١٤</sup> B. om.	<sup>١٦</sup> P. adds. الْبَيِّنَاتِ.	<sup>١٧</sup> B. الكتاب.	<sup>١٩</sup> B. ويلعنهم.
<sup>١٧</sup> B. om.	<sup>١٨</sup> B. الدين.	<sup>٢٠</sup> B. om.	<sup>٢١</sup> B. الدين.

أَوْتُوا الْكِتَابَ <sup>١</sup> لِتَبَيَّنُهُ لِلنَّاسِ وَلَا تَكْتُمُونَهُ <sup>٢</sup> فَلَوْ كَانَ فَعْلُ  
 الرِّقْصِ وَحْضُورِ السَّمَاعِ وَالْفَنَاءِ <sup>٣</sup> وَضَرْبِ الدَّفِ حِرَاماً كَانَ  
 وَاجِباً عَلَيْهِ <sup>٤</sup> بِحَكْمِ هَذِهِ الْآيَةِ تَبَيِّنِهِ لِغَيْرِهِ <sup>٥</sup> وَلَوْ جَازَ ذَلِكَ لَهُ  
 دُونَ غَيْرِهِ وَجْبٌ عَلَيْهِ بَيَانُهُ <sup>٦</sup> كَوْرَدٌ فِي الْخَبَرِ أَنَّهُ صَلَّى اللَّهُ  
 عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ نَهَا مِنْ الْوَصَالِ <sup>٧</sup> ثُمَّ فَعَلَ فَلَمَّا سَأَلُوا قَالَ لَسْتُ  
 كَأَحَدِكُمْ إِنِّي <sup>٨</sup> أَبْيَتُ عِنْدِ رَبِّي يَطْعَمِنِي وَيُسْقِينِي <sup>٩</sup> وَلَمَّا  
 حَضَرَ الرِّقْصَ وَسَمَاعَ الدَّفِ وَالْفَنَاءِ وَلَمْ يَنْهِ أَحَدًا عَنْ ذَلِكَ  
 دَلَّ عَلَى جَوَازِهِ <sup>١١</sup> مُطْلَقاً

فَإِنْ قَالَ الْمُنْكَرُ إِنَّ الرِّقْصَ لَعْبٌ وَاللَّعْبُ حِرَاماً لِأَنَّهُ  
 صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ قَالَ لَا <sup>١٢</sup> الدَّدُ <sup>١٣</sup> مُنْتَيٌ وَلَا أَنَا مِنْ  
 الدَّدِ <sup>١٤</sup> وَالدَّدُ اللَّعْبُ قَلَنَا <sup>١٥</sup> هَذَا الْحَدِيثُ مُخْصُوصٌ <sup>١٦</sup> بِاللَّعْبِ  
 الْمُحْرَمِ كَالنَّرْدِ وَالْقَهَارِ وَمَا أَشْبَهُ ذَلِكَ لِأَنَّهُ وَرَدَ فِي الْبَخَارِيِّ  
 عَنْ عَائِشَةَ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهَا أَنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ

<sup>١</sup> B. الْكِتَاب. <sup>٢</sup> B, C, P. لِتَبَيَّنُهُ.

<sup>٣</sup> B, C, P. يَكْتُمُونَهُ. The three MSS. have 3rd pers. instead of 2nd pers., which suggests that this was the actual text, the author presumably having quoted wrongly from memory.

<sup>٤</sup> B. فَعْلٌ. <sup>٥</sup> B. وَالْفَنَاءُ. <sup>٦</sup> B om. <sup>٧</sup> P. لِغَيْرِهِ. <sup>٨-٩</sup> P om.

<sup>٩</sup> P om. B has added this word, writing it above أَبْيَتِ.

<sup>١٠</sup> B. وَسَقِينِي. <sup>١١</sup> P. جَوَازُهُ. <sup>١٢</sup> P. لَيْسُ.

<sup>١٣</sup> P. وَالدَّدُ. <sup>١٤</sup> B. فَلَنَا. <sup>١٥</sup> B. مُخْصُوصٌ.

<sup>١٤</sup> P. وَالدَّدُ. <sup>١٦</sup> B. الْمُحْرَمُ.

كان واقفاً على باب بيته والجيشة يلعبون بحراً بهم في المسجد  
وأنا أنظر إلى لعبهم فإذا جاز اللعب في المسجد في حضرة  
الشارع في غيره بالطريق <sup>1</sup> الأولى فمن قال إن اللعب مطلقاً  
حرام كان ذلك اعتراضاً منه أنَّ النَّبِيَّ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ  
نظر إلى الحرام وأقرَّ الحرام على حاله ومن اختلَّ في ظنه  
ذلك <sup>2</sup> كفر بالاتفاق <sup>3</sup>

فإن قال المنكر ورد في الخبر لا لعب إلا في ثلاثة <sup>4</sup>  
في الرمي والفرس وملاعبة الرجل <sup>5</sup> أهله قلنا هذا حصر <sup>6</sup>  
الخاص للاهتمام به وذلك لا يدل على تحريم <sup>8</sup> ما سواه كما  
قال الله تعالى <sup>9</sup> إنما أنت منذر وكلمة <sup>10</sup> إنما <sup>11</sup> للحصر وفيه  
إشارة إلى أنَّ الإنذار مختص بك لأنك <sup>12</sup> خاتم النبيين  
وذلك لا يفيد الحصر إذ هو صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ  
مبشر <sup>13</sup> ومبلغ <sup>14</sup> وغير ذلك فكذلك ها هنا فقد ذكر هذه  
الثلاث <sup>15</sup> بالحصر إنما لأنَّ فيها <sup>16</sup> ما هو موجب لإكمال

<sup>1</sup> بطرق B.

<sup>2</sup> مطلقاً B.

<sup>3-4</sup> ذلك ذلك في ظنه P.

<sup>5</sup> بالاتفاق B.

<sup>6</sup> ثلث P.

<sup>7</sup> حضر B adds.

<sup>8</sup> تحريم B.

<sup>9-10</sup> B om.

<sup>10</sup> وكلمة P adds.

<sup>11</sup> لامك B.

<sup>12</sup> مبلغ P.

<sup>13</sup> ومبشر P.

<sup>14</sup> مبلغ B, اللامه P, اللامه B.

<sup>15-16</sup> P om.

<sup>3</sup> ظهور<sup>1</sup> الدين في الري والفرس <sup>2</sup> أو التوادد<sup>2</sup> والتحاب<sup>3</sup>  
<sup>5</sup> لثبوت المودة<sup>4</sup> بين الزوج والزوجة والولد الحاصل بين  
<sup>7</sup> المتحابين ي يكون رضي<sup>6</sup> الأخلاق والولد الذي يأتي<sup>7</sup> بين  
 المتنافرين ي يكون سىء<sup>8</sup> الأخلاق

<sup>10</sup> وقال الله تعالى<sup>8</sup> الذين يستمعون<sup>9</sup> القول فيتبعون<sup>10</sup>  
<sup>12</sup> أحسنـه أولـئـك الـذـين هـدـاهـمـ اللهـ وـأـلـئـكـ هـمـ أـلـوـاـ<sup>11</sup>  
 الأـلـبـابـ والـقـوـلـ أـعـمـ مـنـ أـنـ يـكـوـنـ قـرـآنـاـ أوـ حـدـيـثـاـ أوـ<sup>13</sup>  
 حـكـاـيـةـ حـالـ الصـالـحـينـ اوـ سـمـاعـ الأـشـعـارـ ثـمـ مـدـحـ اللهـ<sup>14</sup>  
 تعالى مـسـتـعـ القـوـلـ وـمـتـبـعـ أـحـسـنـهـ بـالـهـدـاـيـةـ وـالـعـقـلـ فـيـلـزـمـ<sup>15</sup>  
<sup>19</sup> مـنـ هـذـاـ أـنـ مـنـ لـمـ يـسـمـعـ قـوـلـ الـفـنـاءـ الـمـفـهـومـ مـنـ مـطـلـقـ<sup>18</sup>  
<sup>20</sup> قـوـلـهـ يـسـتـمـعـونـ القـوـلـ الـمـشـتـمـلـ عـلـىـ الـحـكـمـةـ بـالـصـوـتـ<sup>21</sup>  
 الحـسـنـ لـمـ يـكـنـ اللهـ هـدـاهـمـ وـلـاـ وـهـبـهـمـ الـعـقـلـ وـمـنـ كـانـ

<sup>1</sup> B. ظهور.

<sup>2-3</sup> P. والتـوـادـدـ.

<sup>4</sup> B adds. لـاـهـلـهـ.

<sup>4</sup> P. المـدـةـ.

<sup>5</sup> B. مـنـ.

<sup>6</sup> B. يـانـيـ.

<sup>7</sup> P. مـنـ.

<sup>8</sup> B om.

<sup>9</sup> B. سـتـمـعـونـ.

<sup>10</sup> B. يـسـعـونـ.

<sup>11</sup> P. الـدـينـ.

<sup>12</sup> P. اوـلـوـاـ.

<sup>13</sup> P. الـلـبـابـ.

<sup>14</sup> P om.

<sup>15-16</sup> P. وـسـمـاعـ.

<sup>16</sup> P om.

<sup>17</sup> P. بـالـعـقـلـ.

<sup>18</sup> P om.

<sup>19</sup> P. الـلـفـومـ.

<sup>20</sup> B. نـاصـوتـ.

<sup>21</sup> A word which is not very clear has been added in B by another hand above the line. It begins with either يـعـالـ or يـعـلـ. It may be meant to be تعالى, which does not occur in the text after الله, or it may be يـلـمـ and so be explanatory of هـدـاهـمـ ; but if it is the latter, the tense is wrong.

غاويا<sup>١</sup> عن الهدایة<sup>٢</sup> كان ضالاً إِذ<sup>٣</sup> الضلال ضد الهدایة<sup>٤</sup>  
 والضال من أهل النار حيث جعل الضلال<sup>٥</sup> صفة<sup>٦</sup>  
 النصارى كا قال<sup>٧</sup> تعلى<sup>٨</sup> في حقّهم قد ضلوا<sup>٩</sup> من قبل<sup>١٠</sup>  
 وأضلوا<sup>١١</sup> كثيرا فلزم من هذا أَنْ من لم<sup>٩</sup> يسمع قول<sup>١٢</sup>  
 الغناء المفهوم من مطلق قوله يستمعون القول الباقي<sup>١١</sup> على<sup>١٣</sup>  
 عمومه وعدم وجdan ما يخصه من<sup>١٤</sup> الغناء بالصوت يكون<sup>١٢</sup>  
 ضالاً وكيف وقد اجتمعت الثلاثة في حضرة رسول الله  
 صلّى الله عليه وسلم حيث قالت امرأة يا رسول الله<sup>١٣</sup>  
 إِنِّي نذرت أَنْ أَضرب بين يديك<sup>١٤</sup> بالدف<sup>١٥</sup> فقال  
 صلّى الله عليه وسلم إِنْ كُنْتَ نذرت<sup>١٦</sup> فاضرب<sup>١٧</sup> فضربت  
 وغنت<sup>١٧</sup> بيت

١٨ طلَمَ الْبَدْرُ عَلَيْنَا مِنْ ثَنَيَاتِ الْوَدَاعِ  
 ٢٠ وَجَبَ الشُّكْرُ عَلَيْنَا مَا دَعَا<sup>١٩</sup> اللَّهُ دَاعٌ

<sup>١</sup> B. عاريأ.

<sup>٢</sup> B. الهدایة.

<sup>٣</sup> B. اذا.

<sup>٤</sup> P. om.

<sup>٥</sup> P. صنعة.

<sup>٦</sup> P. adds الله.

<sup>٧</sup> B. om.

<sup>٨</sup> P. ضلوا.

<sup>٩</sup> P. om.

<sup>١٠</sup> P. om.

<sup>١١</sup> P. الناقى.

<sup>١٢</sup> B. عن.

<sup>١٣-١٤</sup> B. نذرت.

<sup>١٤</sup> B. يديك.

<sup>١٥</sup> P. adds رسول الله.

<sup>١٦</sup> P. نذرتى.

<sup>١٧</sup> P. om. B usually places this word before a poetical quotation. It is not to be taken here as obj. of the preceding verb (in which case it should have been بيتا), but simply as a sign that what follows is poetry.

<sup>١٨</sup> P. داعي. <sup>١٩</sup> B and P. دعى. Text follows C. <sup>٢٠</sup> P. داعي.

فقد <sup>١</sup> سمع صلّى الله عليه وسلم بحکم هذا الحديث قول <sup>٢</sup>  
 المرأة بالصوت <sup>٣</sup> والفناء وضرب الدف <sup>٤</sup> فن قال إنّ حضور  
 السباع وضرب الدف <sup>٥</sup> والرقص حرام فكأنّه <sup>٦</sup> قال إنّ النبي  
 صلّى الله عليه وسلم فعل حراما وأصنف إلى الحرام ومن  
 احتاج <sup>٧</sup> في ظنه ذلك <sup>٨</sup> فقد كفر بالاتفاق ولا خلاف أنّ  
 النذر لا ينعقد في الحرام

وممّا يؤكّد جواز الرقص ما ذكر في مسند  
 أئمّة <sup>٩</sup> حنبل عن علي <sup>١٠</sup> كرم الله وجهه أنّه قال أتيت  
 النبي <sup>١١</sup> صلّى الله عليه وسلم أنا وجمّر وزيد فقال <sup>١٢</sup> لزيد  
 أنت مولاي فجل <sup>١٣</sup> وقال لجمّر <sup>١٤</sup> أنت أشبّهت خلقي  
 وخلقي <sup>١٥</sup> قال فجل ثم قال لي <sup>١٦</sup> أنت متّي فجلت

مكانه B <sup>٤</sup> . والدف والفناء P <sup>٣-٤</sup> . بول B <sup>٢</sup> . وقد P .

ذلك في ظنه P <sup>٥-٦</sup> . وما B <sup>٧</sup> . احتاج B <sup>٨</sup> . ابن P .

قال B <sup>٩</sup> . فجل P <sup>١٠</sup> . يا جمّر P <sup>١١</sup> . أشبّهت B <sup>١٢</sup> .

خلقي P . حلقى B <sup>١٣</sup> . خلقي <sup>١٤</sup> . خلقي B <sup>١٥</sup> . خلقي <sup>١٦</sup> .  
 (i, p. 108).

وحلّي B <sup>١٤</sup> . فجل P <sup>١٥</sup> .

فجلت <sup>١٦</sup> P . This tradition has omissions of words, as compared with its form in the source quoted ; but the author is presumably quoting from memory. As the omissions do not affect the sense, I have not felt it necessary to indicate Ahmad's rendering in every detail.

والحجل<sup>¹</sup> رقص خاص والعام جزء الخاص<sup>²</sup> أي داخل فيه  
فإذا جاز<sup>³</sup> نوع من الرقص جاز مطلقه  
فإن قال المنكر سلمنا جواز التحجيل<sup>⁴</sup> فلم قلتم إنه  
يجوز التكثير<sup>⁵</sup> منه قلنا ما يدل على جواز التكثير منه أن  
الشيء المطلق إذا جاز<sup>⁶</sup> بعضه<sup>⁷</sup> ولم يرد<sup>⁸</sup> النهي عن الباقي  
بقي على جوازه إذ لو كان البعض الآخر على الحرج لوجب  
عليه<sup>⁹</sup> بيانه لقوله تعالى<sup>¹⁰</sup> وأنزلنا<sup>¹¹</sup> إليك الذكر لتبين للناس  
فلو كان التكثير منه حراما لوجب عليه بيانه ولما لم ينفهم  
عن ذلك دل على جوازه

فهذه الأمور التي ذكرناها تتعلق<sup>¹²</sup> بالكتاب<sup>¹³</sup>  
والسنة<sup>¹⁴</sup> وأما الذي يتعلق بالنقل<sup>¹⁵</sup> فا<sup>¹⁶</sup> روى أبو طالب<sup>¹⁷</sup>  
المكي<sup>¹⁸</sup> صاحب قوت القلوب وهو ثقة عند<sup>¹⁹</sup> أهل الإسلام<sup>²⁰</sup>  
أن بعض الصحابة مثل حارثة وعبد الله بن جعفر وغيرهما<sup>²¹</sup>

¹. والحجل P.

². خاص B.

³. جا. P.

⁴. التحجيل B.

⁵. الكثير B.

⁶. جواز B.

⁷. الكثير B.

⁸. P om.

⁹. فإذا P.

¹⁰. بجار B.

¹¹. بعضه B.

¹². برد B.

¹³. علينا P.

¹⁴. أنا انزلنا P.

¹⁵. وبالسنة P.

¹⁶. ذكرنا B.

¹⁷. يتعلق B.

¹⁸. بالكتاب B.

¹⁹. عن P.

²⁰. بالنقل B.

²¹. فيما P. ما P.

²². طالب B.

²³. من P adds.

²⁴. ابن P.

كانوا موظبين لأهل مكة على السمايع إلى زماننا هذا  
وأشار إلى وقت أبي طالب نفسه وقد ذكر الماوردي  
في الحاوي الكبير كلاماً معناه أنَّ بعض الصحابة بلغه  
أنَّ عبد الله بن جعفر مكبٌ على السمايع مستغرقًّا أوقاته  
فيه فقال معاوية لعمرو بن العاص قم بنا إليه فإنَّه غالب  
هواء على شرفه فأتياه إليه وطرق عليه الباب فأمر  
جواريه بالسكتوت وأذن لهم بالدخول فلما استقرَّ هو  
باجلوس فقال يا عبد الله مر هنَّ أنْ يرجعنَ إلى ما كنَّ  
فيه فعملن يغنين ومعاوية يحرّك رأسه ويهزُّ رجليه  
من فوق السرير فقال عمرو بن العاص إنَّ من  
حيث تلهاه أحسن خلاصك منه فقال صه يا عمرو  
إنَّ الكريم لطروب وكان من كبار الصحابة وكاتب  
وحي رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم ومتابعة الصحابة

<sup>1</sup> P وقت. <sup>2</sup> P الى. <sup>3</sup> B حفظ. <sup>4</sup> Following C. B and P مكما.

و قال B . مستعم فا P, مستعم ف C, مستعم فا B .

<sup>7</sup> B om.      <sup>8</sup> P *gj.*

فَاتَنَا <sup>١٠</sup> P رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُمْ and adds العاصي P

<sup>19</sup> P adds يا معاويه 4. <sup>20</sup> B .حيث .<sup>21</sup> P حلاصك .<sup>22</sup> P adds يا معاويه 4.

<sup>23</sup> P فاء. <sup>24</sup> B الكرم.

توجب<sup>1</sup> الاهتداء حيث<sup>2</sup> قال النبي<sup>3</sup> صلى الله عليه وسلم أصحابي<sup>4</sup> كالنجوم بأيهم<sup>5</sup> اقتديتم<sup>6</sup> اهتديتم فنامتنع من الاقداء بهم انتفى في<sup>7</sup> حقه الاهتداء  
فإن قال المنكر على تقدير<sup>8</sup> صحة هذا القول المنقول  
عن الصحابة<sup>9</sup> أنا أباع<sup>10</sup> بعض الصحابة في جميع الصور  
إلا في السماع قلنا هذا لا يجدي<sup>11</sup> نفعا لأنه حيئته<sup>12</sup>  
يكون حاله مع الصحابة كحال أبي لهب مع النبي<sup>13</sup>  
صلى الله عليه وسلم فإن له أن يقول أنا مؤمن بقولك  
يا محمد ومن جملة<sup>14</sup> قولك أنا لا أؤمن فأنا أصدقك<sup>15</sup> في  
هذا يقال له<sup>16</sup> هذا لا ينفعك لأن الإيمان<sup>17</sup> المعتبر هو الإيمان  
بجميع<sup>18</sup> ما أتي به النبي<sup>19</sup> صلى الله عليه وسلم لا ببعضه  
فكذا<sup>20</sup> حال من تابع<sup>21</sup> الصحابة في بعض الأحوال إلا في  
السماع فإن<sup>22</sup> لا ينفعه

1 P. واجب رجب.

5 B. مايهم.

9-10 P. om.

11 B. محدى.

14 B. أصدقك.

18 B. بل عليه ان لا يبغضه C has a different reading ببغضها P. ببعضها (nay, it is his duty not to hate it). This reading can hardly be correct, but it has the correct suffix.

20 B adds في بعض الصحابة P adds الصحابة B 21 بعض B. فكذا

2 P. om.

6 B. اقتديتم.

10 (؟) A. تابع See above, l. 12.

12 B. حيند.

15 P. 41.

16 B. الامان.

7 P. من.

17 B. جلة.

18 B. حله.

19 B. حيند.

20 B. حله.

3 B. om.

11 B. قدر.

13 B. جلة.

16 B. حله.

17 B. جلة.

18 B. حله.

19 B. حله.

20 B. حله.

21 B. حله.

22 B. حله.

23 B. حله.

4 B. اصحابي.

8 B. قدر.

10 B. جلة.

12 B. حله.

14 B. حله.

16 B. حله.

18 B. حله.

20 B. حله.

22 B. حله.

24 B. حله.

26 B. حله.

فإن قال المنكر إنَّ أبا حنيفة<sup>١</sup> أو الشیخ أبا البیان  
 حرم السماع فَإِنَّا أَتَابَعْهُ<sup>٢</sup> في ذلك قلنا<sup>٣</sup> يلزمـه أَوْلـا حـمل<sup>٤</sup>  
 قول أبي حنيفة<sup>٥</sup> أَنَّ مـا ثـبـت لـفـظـه المـبارـك بـه<sup>٦</sup> الشـیـخ  
 المـذـکـور عـلـى سـمـاعـ المـلاـھـي الـحرـمـة وـسـمـاعـ الـفـنـاء الـمـضـلـ<sup>٧</sup>  
 المـلـھـي لـا عـلـى الـفـنـاء الـمـطـلـق وـإـلـا لـزـمـه مـحـذـورـات<sup>٨</sup> أـحـدـها  
 إـمـا الـكـفـر أـو الـفـسـق<sup>٩</sup> وـذـلـك لـأـنـ الـأـحـادـیـت بـاعـتـبـار وـصـوـلـها  
 إـلـيـنـا ثـلـاثـة أـنـوـاعـ أـحـدـهـا<sup>١٠</sup> حـدـیـث مـتـوـاتـرـ الـأـصـل مـتـوـاتـرـ الـفـرع  
 كـحـدـیـث<sup>١١</sup> الـقـرـآن وـالـصـلـوة وـالـزـکـوـة بـحـادـهـ کـافـر وـثـانـیـها  
 حـدـیـث آـحـاد<sup>١٢</sup> الـأـصـل مـشـهـورـ الـفـرع كـأـحـادـیـث<sup>١٣</sup> الـبـخارـی  
 وـمـسـلـم بـحـادـهـ فـاسـق وـثـانـیـها حـدـیـث آـحـاد الـأـصـل آـحـاد<sup>١٤</sup>  
 الـفـرع كـحـدـیـث<sup>١٥</sup> أـنـا مـنـ اللـه وـالـمـؤـمـنـونـ مـنـیـ وـغـيرـ ذـلـك

<sup>١</sup> P has the following note in the margin :  
 فـبـهـمـ الـمـجـتـهـدـ حـجـةـ وـهـذـاـ  
 الـإـمـامـ فـنـ بـجـوـزـ تـقـلـيـدـهـ لـأـنـهـ مـنـ الـقـرـونـ الشـهـوـدـ فـبـهـمـ بـالـخـيـرـ قـدـ قـالـ صـاحـبـ الشـرـعـ  
 صـلـیـ اللـهـ عـلـیـهـ وـسـلـمـ خـیـرـ الـقـرـونـ قـرـنـیـ ثـمـ الـذـینـ يـلـوـنـهـمـ [ثـمـ] الـذـینـ يـلـوـنـهـمـ  
 (الـذـیـ) هـوـ فـبـهـمـ لـاـنـ الـإـمـامـ النـعـانـ رـضـیـ اللـهـ عـنـهـ وـلـدـ سـنـةـ ٧ـ وـمـاتـ  
 رـجـهـ اللـهـ سـنـةـ ١٥٥ـ فـهـوـ أـوـلـیـ بـالـاتـبـاعـ وـقـائـلـ هـذـاـ الـكـلـامـ مـتـأـخـرـ (?ـ)ـ سـنـةـ ١٥٥ـ

<sup>٢</sup> P. <sup>٣</sup> بـلـنـاـ. <sup>٤</sup> فـاـنـاـ. <sup>٥</sup> بـ om. <sup>٦</sup> بـ om. <sup>٧</sup> بـ om. <sup>٨</sup> بـ adds.  
<sup>٩</sup> بـ adds. <sup>١٠</sup> الـفـنـيـ. <sup>١١</sup> P adds. <sup>١٢</sup> P adds. <sup>١٣</sup> بـ om.  
<sup>١٤</sup> P. <sup>١٥</sup> بـ om. <sup>١٦</sup> بـ adds. <sup>١٧</sup> بـ adds. <sup>١٨</sup> بـ adds. <sup>١٩</sup> بـ adds.  
<sup>٢٠</sup> بـ om. <sup>٢١</sup> P. <sup>٢٢</sup> P om.

فلا شيء على جاحده وما ذكرناه<sup>1</sup> من الأحاديث على  
 إباحة السيماع وجواز سماع صوت الدف والفناء والأشعار آحاد<sup>2</sup>  
 الأصل مشهور الفرع فان جحد<sup>3</sup> هذه الأحاديث فسوق وإن  
 رجح<sup>4</sup> الرواية فيه<sup>5</sup> عن أبي حنيفة<sup>6</sup> أو غيره على قول النبي<sup>7</sup>  
 صلى الله عليه وسلم<sup>8</sup> وفعله بأن يعتقد أنَّ الرواية في  
 تحريم<sup>9</sup> السيماع مطلقاً صحيحة صادقة وفعل النبي صلى الله عليه  
 وسلم<sup>10</sup> وقوله غير صحيح وغير صادق<sup>11</sup> كفر بالاتفاق<sup>12</sup>  
 وثانيها أنه يلزم<sup>13</sup> الانحراف<sup>14</sup> في البيان وذلك أنه<sup>15</sup>  
 يتوَّل<sup>16</sup> كثيراً من الأخبار الصحيحة كقول النبي صلى  
 الله عليه وسلم للأعرابي<sup>17</sup> حينها صلى غير متم ركوعه  
 وسجوده صل<sup>18</sup> فإنك لم تصل<sup>19</sup> يقي الشارع الصلة<sup>20</sup>  
 بالكلية<sup>21</sup> وهو يحمله على الصلة الناقصة وإنما تكون  
 ناقصة إن لو قال صل<sup>22</sup> وسكت وكذا قوله إذا بلغ<sup>23</sup> الماء  
 قلتين لم يحمل<sup>24</sup> خبشاً يتوَّل<sup>25</sup> بأنه لم يقو<sup>26</sup> على حمل الخبرت

<sup>1</sup> B. جاحده.

<sup>2</sup> B. ذكرنا.

<sup>3</sup> P. احاديث.

<sup>4</sup> B. ححد.

<sup>5</sup> P. هذا.

<sup>6</sup> B. رجح.

<sup>7</sup> B. فتبه.

<sup>8</sup> B. adds رضي الله عنه.

<sup>9-10</sup> B. om.

<sup>10</sup> B. تحريم.

<sup>11</sup> P. adds فقد.

<sup>12</sup> P. adds.

<sup>11</sup> B. بالاتفاق.

<sup>14</sup> P. يلزم.

<sup>15</sup> B. adds الا.

<sup>16</sup> B. يسود.

<sup>17</sup> P. يكون.

<sup>18</sup> B. فالي.

<sup>19</sup> P. وقى.

<sup>20</sup> P. تحمله.

<sup>22-23</sup> B. المقالتين.

<sup>22</sup> B. تحمل.

<sup>24</sup> P. تقوى.

<sup>25</sup> B.

وهو خروج<sup>١</sup> عن المفهوم نظيره إذا بلغ الماء بحراً عظيماً  
 لم يحمل خبشاً وكذا قال هنا على حاله فذلك مثله وإن  
 جعل تأویل<sup>٢</sup> هذا كتأویل<sup>٣</sup> ذلك خالف الإجماع مطلقاً  
 وكذا<sup>٤</sup> قول النبي<sup>٥</sup> صلى الله عليه وسلم<sup>٦</sup> كل نكاح<sup>٧</sup>  
 لم يكن بولي<sup>٨</sup> وشاهدى عدل فهو سفاح سفاح<sup>٩</sup>  
 يئول في حق الصغيرة والأمة قوله<sup>١٠</sup> صلى الله عليه وسلم  
 الأيتم أحق ب نفسها يئول في حق الحرة البالفة وغير ذلك  
 من الأحاديث فإذا جُوّز<sup>١١</sup> تأویل الأحاديث النبوية<sup>١٢</sup> بما<sup>١٣</sup>  
 لا يوافقه مجتهد آخر فتأویل<sup>١٤</sup> قول أبي حنيفة<sup>١٥</sup> أو الرواية<sup>١٦</sup>  
 فيه إن ثبت بتحريم<sup>١٧</sup> النساء والسماع على سماع الفسق  
 والفحور بطريق الأولى

وثالثها أنه يلزم إخراج<sup>١٨</sup> أبي حنيفة رضي الله عنه  
 من زمرة الأولياء وإدخاله في زمرة<sup>١٩</sup> منكري أهل الحق  
 وذلك لأنّ أولياء الله الكامل<sup>٢٠</sup> أصحاب المقامات سمعوا السماع

<sup>١</sup> بـ خروج.

<sup>٢</sup> بـ تأویل.

<sup>٣</sup> بـ تأویل P كتأویل B.

<sup>٤</sup> بـ مطلقاً.

<sup>٥-٦</sup> بـ قوله.

<sup>٧-٨</sup> بـ عليه السلام.

<sup>٩</sup> بـ نكاح.

<sup>٩</sup> بـ بولي.

<sup>١٠</sup> بـ حرجنا P.

<sup>١١-١٢</sup> بـ عليه السلام.

<sup>١٣</sup> بـ النبوة.

<sup>١٣</sup> بـ ما.

<sup>١٤</sup> بـ فتاویل P adds.

<sup>١٥</sup> بـ إلى B.

<sup>١٦</sup> بـ اهـ.

<sup>١٦</sup> بـ بتحريم P.

<sup>١٧</sup> بـ اخراج B.

<sup>١٨</sup> بـ صـ P.

<sup>١٩</sup> بـ الكامل P.

وتحرَّكوا<sup>١</sup> فيه كا هو مذكور في سيرهم فلو قالوا<sup>٢</sup> إنَّ أباً  
 حنيفة أَنَكَرَ مطلق<sup>٣</sup> السَّمَاعَ كَانَ ذَلِكَ إِنْكَاراً<sup>٤</sup> عَلَى الْأُولَىِاءِ  
 وَأَبُو حَنِيفَةَ مِنَ الْأُولَىِاءِ وَالْوَلِيِّ لَا يَنْكِرُ عَلَى وَلِيٍّ<sup>٥</sup> آخَرَ  
 مِثْلِهِ إِلَّا لَكَانَ<sup>٦</sup> مُنْكَرًا<sup>٧</sup> عَلَى نَفْسِهِ وَالْمُنْكَرُ عَلَى نَفْسِهِ  
 مُسْتَكْمَلٌ<sup>٨</sup> لَا كَامِلٌ<sup>٩</sup> وَالْجَهْدُ كَامِلٌ فَإِذَا<sup>١٠</sup> لَوْ ثَبَتَ قَوْلُ<sup>١١</sup>  
 أَبِي حَنِيفَةَ بِتَحْرِيمِ السَّمَاعِ كَانَ ذَلِكَ<sup>١٢</sup> مُثُوِّلًا بِسَمَاعِ<sup>١٣</sup> الْمَلَاهِيِّ  
 وَالْفَسْقِ وَالْفَجُورِ وَالْكَذْبِ وَلَا نِزَاعٌ فِي ذَلِكَ بَيْنَ  
 الْكُلِّ

وَرَابِعُهَا [أَنَّهُ]<sup>١٤</sup> يَلْزَمُهُ تَرْكُ مَا اشْتَرَطَ فِي صَحَّتِهِ  
 الْعَدْلَةِ وَالْخِيَارِ مَا لَا يَشْتَرِطُ فِيهِ ذَلِكَ لَأَنَّ أَخْذَ الْفَقْهَ مِنَ  
 كَتَبِ الْفَقْهِ لَا يَشْتَرِطُ فِي كِتَبَةِ<sup>١٥</sup> الْفَقْهِ عَدْلَةِ<sup>١٦</sup> الْكَاتِبِ وَلَا  
 عَدْلَةِ الرَّاوِيِّ بِفَازَ أَنَّ الْكَاتِبَ فِي النَّسْخَةِ<sup>١٧</sup> الْأُولَىِ<sup>١٨</sup> أَوْ  
 الْثَّانِيَةِ<sup>١٩</sup> زَادَ شَيْئًا أَوْ نَقَصَ شَيْئًا<sup>٢٠</sup> فَإِذَا<sup>٢١</sup> لَا يَعْتَدُ عَلَى ذَلِكَ  
 حَرْزًا<sup>٢٢</sup> بِخَلْفِ الْأَحَادِيثِ النَّبُوَيَّةِ<sup>٢٣</sup> فَإِنَّهُ<sup>٢٤</sup> اشْتَرَطَ فِي صَحَّةِ

<sup>١</sup> P. وَتَحْرَكَ.

<sup>٢</sup> P adds. قَالَ.

<sup>٣</sup> مُطْلَقاً P.

<sup>٤</sup> B. إِنْكَاراً P. إِنْذَاراً B.

<sup>٥</sup> P om. لَانَ B.

<sup>٦</sup> B. مُنْكَرًا P. مُنْكَرًا B.

<sup>٧</sup> B. فَاذْنَ B.

<sup>٨-٩</sup> من اسماع P. <sup>١١</sup> B and P om. <sup>١٢</sup> P.

كِتَبًا P.

<sup>١٠-١١</sup> أو الثانية B. <sup>١٥-١٦</sup> P. <sup>١٤</sup> السَّخَةُ B. <sup>١٥-١٦</sup> P. <sup>١٣</sup> العَدْلَةُ B.

<sup>١٦</sup> P om.

فَإِذَا تَرَكَ قَوْلًا P. <sup>١٩</sup> الْنَّبُوَيَّةُ B.

<sup>١٧</sup> P. <sup>١٨</sup> حَرْزًا P.

روايتها <sup>١</sup> العدالة <sup>٢</sup> ومن ترك قولها اشترط في صحته  
 العدالة <sup>٣</sup> واختار قولها لم يشترط في صحته العدالة كان  
 سفيها <sup>٤</sup> إذ السفيه هو من لا يختار <sup>٥</sup> الأصلح <sup>٦</sup> لدینه ودنياه  
 ولا يلتفت إلى قول السفيه  
 فإن قال المنكر إن <sup>٧</sup> هذه الأحاديث الواردة فيه  
 آحاد <sup>٨</sup> لا توجب <sup>٩</sup> القطع فلا نعمل <sup>١٠</sup> بها <sup>١١</sup> قلنا <sup>١٢</sup> يلزمك <sup>٩</sup> أن  
<sup>١٤</sup> لا تعمل بحديث من الآحاد <sup>١٣</sup> التي استدلوا بها في تصحيح  
<sup>١٨</sup> <sup>١٧</sup> <sup>١٦</sup> <sup>١٥</sup> <sup>١٤</sup> أحكام الفقه من الآحاد <sup>١٥</sup> فإذا لم <sup>١٩</sup> يعملا <sup>٢٠</sup> بهذه  
 الأحاديث التي ذكرناها <sup>١٩</sup> لزمه <sup>٢٠</sup> أن لا يعملا بأحاديث  
 الآحاد في الفقه وحيثند تبطل عليهم أحكام الفقه بأسرها  
 واستدلوا بقوله [ تعالى ] <sup>٢١</sup> وما كان صلوتهم عند البيت  
 إلا مكاء وتصدية والبكاء الصغير والتصدية هي ضرب  
<sup>٢٤</sup> <sup>٢٣</sup> <sup>٢٢</sup> إحدى الراحتين بالأخرى يخرج <sup>٢٣</sup> منها صوت قلنا هذا

<sup>١</sup> B, روايته P. فايده.

<sup>٢-٣</sup> P om.

<sup>٤</sup> P. صحة and adds قايل.

<sup>٤</sup> P. إذا.

<sup>٥</sup> P. يختاره.

<sup>٦</sup> P. repeats. <sup>٧</sup> P. الاصلاح.

<sup>٦</sup> P. احاديث.

<sup>٦</sup> P. بوجب.

<sup>٩</sup> P. يعمل.

<sup>١١</sup> B. ٤.

<sup>١٢</sup> P. adds ٤.

<sup>١٣</sup> P. في اثبات مسائل الفقه، الأحاديث B adds.

<sup>١٧</sup> B. فعلوا <sup>١٦</sup> P. فان.

<sup>١٤</sup> B. صريح P. صحيح.

<sup>١٥-١٦</sup> P. om.

<sup>١٧</sup> B. كلهم.

<sup>١٨</sup> B. بهذه B. قبله and adds ذكرنا <sup>١٩</sup> بهته.

<sup>٢٠</sup> بهته.

<sup>٢٠</sup> بهته.

<sup>٢١</sup> B and P om.

<sup>٢٢</sup> احاد P.

<sup>٢٣</sup> بالاخري B.

<sup>٢٤</sup> بخرج P.

استدلال <sup>١</sup> غير موافق <sup>٢</sup> لأنه <sup>٣</sup> منعهم عن المكاء والتصدية  
 عند البيت ولا يلزم من منع شيء في حالة محرمة منعه في  
<sup>٤</sup> مقامات تباین <sup>٣</sup> ذلك المحل <sup>٥</sup> ولهذا يجوز <sup>٤</sup> للمرأة <sup>٥</sup> في الصلوة  
<sup>٦</sup> ضرب الراحة على ظهر كفها إذا نابها شيء، ولا يجوز في  
<sup>٦</sup> غير هذه الحالة <sup>٦</sup> ولما كان البيت معظمه <sup>٦</sup> والطواف حوله  
<sup>٧</sup> صلوة <sup>٧</sup> منعهم عن ذلك <sup>٨</sup> وأيضاً <sup>٨</sup> قال وما كان صلوتهم <sup>٩</sup>  
<sup>٩</sup> وما قال وما كان سماعهم <sup>١٠</sup> فاذا <sup>١٢</sup> لا يجوز <sup>١١</sup> من منع التصدية  
 حول البيت منعه فيسائر الموضع

واستدلوا <sup>١٣</sup> أيضاً بقوله تعالى <sup>١٤</sup> ومن الناس من  
<sup>١٥</sup> يشتري <sup>١٥</sup> له الحديث <sup>١٦</sup> ليضل <sup>١٦</sup> عن سبيل الله بغير علم  
 وهو الحديث هو الغباء قلنا يفهم من قوله له الحديث  
<sup>١٦</sup> أنه <sup>١٦</sup> يجوز سماع حق الحديث سواء كان قرآن أو شعراً أو  
 غير ذلك وقد ذكرنا أحاديث صحيحة <sup>١٧</sup> على جواز سماع  
<sup>١٨</sup> صوت الدف والغباء والشعر وقد ورد إن من الشعر

<sup>١-٢</sup> بجبور P <sup>٤</sup> بتباین B <sup>٣</sup> فانه P <sup>٣</sup> فاسد P <sup>٣</sup> غير موافق B.

<sup>٤-٥</sup> بـ om. <sup>٦</sup> صلاة P <sup>٧</sup> غيرها P <sup>٦-٧</sup> أيضاً B.

<sup>٩</sup> P adds <sup>١٠</sup> عند البيت ما <sup>١١</sup> P adds ما <sup>١٠</sup> بـ om.

<sup>١٢</sup> بـ om. <sup>١٣-١٤</sup> بقوله أيضاً B <sup>١٤</sup> شيري B.

<sup>١٥</sup> فاذن B. <sup>١٦</sup> بـ om. <sup>١٧</sup> بـ om. <sup>١٨</sup> P om.

<sup>١٦-١٧</sup> P om. <sup>١٦</sup> P.

لحكمة فدلّ هذا النصٌ على أنَّ لهو الحديث مختصٌ  
 بسماع المضلَّ الملهي عن الحقِّ والعبادة وما يبعد العبد  
 عن الله تعالى فَلَمْ يَكُنْ كَذَلِكَ فَهُوَ باقٌ على الإباحة  
 وأيضاً إذا ورد نصٌ يفيدُ العموم وجوبَ أولاً طلبَ  
 المختصٌ<sup>5</sup> فإنَّ وجد فذلك <sup>6</sup>إِلَّا يَحْمِلُ على العموم كَمَا  
 ورد في الخبر أَحْتَوَا في وجوهِ المذاهين التراب ثمَّ وردَ  
 أَنَّه مدح النبيَّ صَلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَأَثْنَيَ عَلَيْهِ وَمِنْهُ  
 قول<sup>10</sup> كعب بن زهير رضي الله عنه<sup>11</sup> بيت<sup>12</sup>

بانت سعاد قلبي اليوم متبول  
 متيّم<sup>13</sup> أثراها لم يفِد مكبول<sup>14</sup>  
 إلى أنَّ وصل قراءة إلى قوله  
 [نبَّئت]<sup>15</sup> أنَّ رسولَ [الله]<sup>14</sup> أَوْعَدَنِي  
 والمغفو عند رسول الله مأمول

<sup>1</sup> P had first the **ال الحديث** and scored it out, but evidently began to write the word over again. The text stands thus: **والحمد والنص**.

<sup>2</sup> P. <sup>3</sup> P. <sup>4</sup> P. <sup>5</sup> المخصوص. <sup>6</sup> فيحمل.

<sup>7</sup> B. <sup>8</sup> B. <sup>9</sup> B. <sup>10</sup> B. <sup>11-12</sup> B. <sup>13</sup> ب.

<sup>12</sup> P om. At this point B has a long omission which would amount to a complete folio. Parts of the matter omitted by B are included in C.

<sup>13-18</sup> Nöldeke, *Delectus*, مَجْزُونٌ.

<sup>14</sup> Following Nöl. P om. <sup>15</sup> Following Nöl. P om.

فَأَلْقَى إِلَيْهِ رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ بِرْدَتَهُ فَوَجَبَ حَمْلُ قَوْلِهِ أَحْتَوْا فِي وُجُوهِ الْمَدَاهِينِ التَّرَابَ عَلَى مَدْحِ الْكَذْبِ وَالْفَسْقِ وَالْفَسَاقِ فَهَكُذَا هُنَّا وَجَبَ حَمْلُهُو أَحْدِيثُ عَلَى الْكَذْبِ وَالْفَسْقِ وَالْمَلَاهِي وَمَا لَمْ يَكُنْ كَذْلِكَ فَهُوَ جَائِزٌ قَطْعًا

<sup>١</sup>إِنْ قَالَ الْمُنْكَرَ سَمَاعَ الْفَقَرَاءِ مِبَاحٌ بِمَا ذَكَرْتُمْ مِنْ الشَّرَائِطِ وَسَمَاعَ الْعَوَامِ حَرَامٌ قَلْنَا<sup>٢</sup> لَا يَحْلِلُ لِأَحَدٍ أَنْ يَحْلِلَ وَيُحْرِمَ فِي الشَّرْعِ مَا لَمْ يَنْصُّ الشَّارِعُ عَلَيْهِ لِمَا وَرَدَ فِي الْخَبَرِ الْحَلَالَ بَيْنَ وَالْحَرَامَ بَيْنَ وَبَيْنَهُمَا أَمْوَالٌ مُشْتَبِهَاتٌ<sup>٣</sup> وَقَالَ اللَّهُ تَعَالَى وَلَا تَقُولُوا<sup>٤</sup> مَا تَصْفُ أَسْنَتُكُمُ الْكَذْبُ هَذَا حَلَالٌ وَهَذَا حَرَامٌ لَتَفَتَّرُوا عَلَى اللَّهِ الْكَذْبِ فَنَّ قَالَ إِنَّ السَّمَاعَ حَرَامٌ مُطْلَقاً<sup>٥</sup> فَقَدْ حَرَمَ فِي الشَّرْعِ مَا لَمْ يَرِدِ النَّصْ بِهِ إِذْ لَمْ يَرِدِ فِي كِتَابِ اللَّهِ تَعَالَى<sup>٦</sup> وَلَا فِي سُنْنَةِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ

فَانْ قَالَ سَمَاعَ الْعَوَامِ حَرَامٌ وَسَمَاعَ الْفَقَرَاءِ وَاهْلَ الْمَوَاجِدِ مِبَاحٌ قَلْنَا<sup>١-٢</sup> C. After this point it goes on to different matter. This is on F. 7a.

وَانَّا وَرَدَ فِي الْحَدِيثِ الْحَلَالَ بَيْنَ وَالْحَرَامَ بَيْنَ وَبَيْنَهُمَا اَمْوَالٌ مُشْتَبِهَاتٌ فَإِذَا لَا يَحْلِلُ لِأَحَدٍ أَنْ يَحْلِلَ وَيُحْرِمَ السَّمَاعَ وَيَحْلِلُ بِأَفْيِ الشَّرْعِ مَا لَمْ يَرِدِ النَّصْ بِهِ إِذْ لَمْ يَرِدِ فِي كِتَابِ اللَّهِ تَعَالَى<sup>٧</sup> وَفِي سُنْنَةِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ<sup>٨</sup> Al-Tirmidhi, Buyū<sup>٩</sup> 1, and Abū Dāwud, Buyū<sup>١٠</sup> 3, have مشتبهات.

عَزْ وَجْلَ C. قَالَ C. مِبَاحٌ P. قَوْلُوا C. om. C. om.

عَزْ وَجْلَ C. adds حَكَمَا بِرَايَهِ مِنْ فَيْرَ نَصْ مُعْتَقَدًا ذَلِكَ كَفْرٌ C. ٧-٨

صَلَّى C. سَلَمَ P. om. رَسُولُهُ عَلَيْهِ الصَّلَاةُ وَالسَّلَامُ C. ٩-١٠

صلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَلَا فِي كَلَامِ الصَّحَّابَةِ رَضِيَ اللَّهُ  
 عَنْهُمْ نَصَّ بِتَحْرِيمِ السَّمَاعِ وَالرَّقْصِ وَمَنْ حَرَّمَ فِي  
 الشَّرْعِ مَا لَيْسَ فِيهِ افْتَرَى عَلَى اللَّهِ شَيْئًا وَمَنْ افْتَرَى  
 عَلَى اللَّهِ شَيْئًا كَفَرَ بِالْإِجْمَاعِ<sup>5</sup> وَأَيْضًا إِنَّ سَمَاعَ الْعَوَامَّ  
 وَرَقْصَهُمْ تَشْبِيهٌ لِتَفْرِجَاتِهِمْ فِي الْبَسَاتِينِ سَمَاعَ الْجَبَشَةِ  
 وَرَقْصَهُمْ يَدِنُ يَدِي رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَلَا  
 خَلَافٌ فِي إِبَاحةِ ذَلِكَ فَكَذَلِكَ حَرْكَاتِهِمْ فِي السَّمَاعِ  
 وَأَيْضًا فِي الْخَبَرِ مِنْ تَشْبِهِ بِقَوْمٍ فَهُوَ مِنْهُمْ وَأَصْحَابُ الْحَقِّ  
 الْمُحْضُ فَرَطُوا النَّاسَ بِهِ وَأُولَئِكَ اللَّهُ تَعَالَى كَالْجَنِيدِ<sup>6</sup> وَغَيْرِهِ  
 رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُمْ تَحْرِكَوْا<sup>7</sup> فِي السَّمَاعِ كَمَا هُوَ مَنْقُولٌ عَنْهُمْ  
 فِي رِسَالَةِ الْقَشِيرِيِّ وَغَيْرِهَا مِنَ الْكِتَبِ فَإِنْ تَحْرِكَ عَامِيَّ  
 فِي السَّمَاعِ تَشْبِهُهَا بِهِمْ طَالِبًا مِنْ تَرَكَاتِهِمْ كَانُوا مِنْهُمْ وَقَدْ  
 وَرَدَ فِي الْخَبَرِ إِنَّ هَؤُلَاءِ الْقَوْمَ لَا يُشْقَى بِهِمْ جَلِيلُهُمْ

<sup>1-2</sup> P. om.

<sup>2-2</sup> C, after which C goes on to matter which has occurred already (p. 147 f.).

<sup>3-3</sup> C, continuing from end of p. 150, n. 1, has سَمَاعَ الْعَوَامَ وَتَوَاجِدَهُمْ على الصوت الموزون سَمَاعٌ بَلْ يُشَبِّهُ سَمَاعَ الْجَبَشَةِ بَيْنَ يَدِي رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صلَّى اللهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ وَرَقْصَهُمْ وَلَا شَيْءٌ وَرَدَ عَلَى الْامْتِنَاعِ فَبَقِيَ عَلَى الْإِبَاحةِ فَإِذَا سَمَاعَ الْعَوَامَ كَتَفْرِجَاتِهِمْ فِي الْبَسَاتِينِ وَلَا خَلَافٌ فِي إِبَاحةِ ذَلِكَ فَسَعَاهُمْ خَلَافٌ فِي P. om. مِنْهُمْ

<sup>4</sup> P. كَالْجَنِيدِيٍّ

<sup>5</sup> P. om.

فإن قال المنكر <sup>١</sup> إذا <sup>٢</sup> تواجد <sup>٣</sup> شخص في الساع على  
محبة إنسان أو على صورته <sup>٤</sup> كان حراماً <sup>٥</sup> قلنا قد ورد في  
الخبر <sup>٦</sup> والذي نفسي بيده لا تدخلون <sup>٧</sup> الجنة حتى  
تؤمنوا ولا تؤمنوا حتى تhabوا <sup>٨</sup> أولاً أدلكم على شيء  
إذا فعلتموه تhabيتهم افسوا السلام بينكم وفي رواية تهادوا  
وفي الخبر أيضاً <sup>٩</sup> ينادي الله تعالى يوم القيمة <sup>١٠</sup> أين المتحابون  
لجلالي لهم منابر <sup>١١</sup> من نور فيبسطهم <sup>١٢</sup> النبيون والشهداء  
فإذا <sup>١٣</sup> تhab <sup>١٤</sup> شخصان لله <sup>١٥</sup> تعالى وتحرك <sup>١٦</sup> أحدهما <sup>١٧</sup> على  
محبة الآخر لله <sup>١٨</sup> تعالى كان ذلك مباحاً <sup>١٩</sup> إذ لم يعترف  
بالباطل <sup>٢٠</sup>

فإن قال <sup>٢١</sup> المنكر لا يتحرك العادي <sup>٢٢</sup> إلا باللعل  
والباطل ومثل هذا اللعل حرام قلنا ورد في الخبر <sup>٢٣</sup> إذا

<sup>٤</sup> انسان على صورة شخص او على محبته <sup>٥</sup> C om. <sup>٦</sup> لو <sup>٧</sup> C adds ad.  
المحب على التحاب [التعاب] في الله عن وجل حيث قال عليه الصلاه والسلام <sup>٨-٩</sup> C  
١٠-١١ تدخلوا <sup>١٢</sup> C. <sup>١٣</sup> Al-Tirmidhi, *Istidhān*, 1; <sup>١٤</sup> Ibn Māja, *Adab*, 11, <sup>١٥</sup> Muslim,  
١٦-١٧ منا بر <sup>١٨</sup> P. <sup>١٩</sup> فينصب <sup>٢٠</sup> C adds ad. <sup>٢١</sup> تدخلون <sup>٢٢</sup> P adds ad. <sup>٢٣</sup> يقول <sup>٢٤</sup> C adds ad.  
٢٥ وهذا الحديث في جامع الاصول <sup>٢٦</sup> C adds ad. <sup>٢٧</sup> P. <sup>٢٨</sup> نعطيهم <sup>٢٩</sup> C adds ad.  
٢٩-٣٠ وتوارد <sup>٣١</sup> C. <sup>٣٢</sup> في الله <sup>٣٣</sup> C. <sup>٣٤</sup> تحييا <sup>٣٥</sup> P. <sup>٣٦</sup> إذا <sup>٣٧</sup> C adds ad.  
٣٧-٣٨ احدهما <sup>٣٩</sup> C om. <sup>٤٠</sup> احدهما <sup>٤١</sup> C om. <sup>٤٢</sup> P adds ad.  
٤٣-٤٤ واما التواجد على الهوى والشهوة فلا يطلع على اخيك [MS. خنك] أحد <sup>٤٥</sup> C MS.  
إلا الله عن وجل فإذا وجد [MS. وجد] شخص عامي متواجد ولم يعرف هو  
بباطل وجب حله على احسن الاقوال لما لم يظهر منه ما يخالف الشرع عملاً  
لقوله صلى الله عليه وسلم

برز<sup>١</sup> من أخيك كلام<sup>٢</sup> فلا تحمله على مجمل السوء،  
وأنت<sup>٣</sup> تجد له مملاً حسناً فإذا رأينا مؤمناً موحداً عامياً  
كان<sup>٤</sup> أو غيره متخرّجاً في السباع ولم يعترف بالباطل وجب  
حمل<sup>٥</sup> فعله على الحقّ فإن<sup>٦</sup> كان المظنون<sup>٧</sup> كما ظن فذاك وإلا  
فأمر اعتقاده إلى الله تعالى لا إلى الناظر إليه وأيضاً لما<sup>٨</sup>  
تحررت<sup>٩</sup> المذاهب واختار كلّ مجتهد ما غالب على ظنه بعد  
نظره في النصوص وتبع كلّ مجتهد<sup>١١</sup> قوم فلا يليق لأحد  
أن يحظى<sup>١٢</sup> أحداً أصلاً فعلى هذا السباع مباح<sup>١٣</sup> عند  
الشافعية<sup>١٤</sup> مطلقاً فلا لوم على من يفعله<sup>١٥</sup> من متابعيهم<sup>١٦</sup> كما  
أن الزاني بالمرأة المستأجرة يسقط<sup>١٧</sup> عنه الحد عند أبي<sup>١٨</sup>  
حنفية<sup>١٩</sup> فلا لوم لمن يفعل ذلك من متابعيه ولكن لو علم  
به الحاكم الشافعي<sup>٢٠</sup> حدّه ولم يلتفت إلى اجتهاده لورود  
الكتاب<sup>٢١</sup> بذلك حيث قال<sup>٢٢</sup> الله تعالى<sup>٢٣</sup> الزانية والزاني<sup>٢٤</sup>  
فاجلدوا<sup>٢٥</sup> كلّ واحد منها مائة جلدة<sup>٢٦</sup> ولا يعارض النص

<sup>١</sup> C بدا.<sup>٢</sup> P. كلاماً.<sup>٣</sup> P. وان.<sup>٤</sup> C branches off at this point.<sup>٥</sup> B resumes here.<sup>٦</sup> P. وان.<sup>٧</sup> P adds بـ.<sup>٨</sup> B om.<sup>٩</sup> P. كما.<sup>١٠</sup> P. تحرير.<sup>١١</sup> B. متحهد.<sup>١٢</sup> B. يحظى.<sup>١٣</sup> P. يجوز.<sup>١٤</sup> B. يفعل.<sup>١٥</sup> P. متابعيهم.<sup>١٦</sup> P. الساحرة.<sup>١٧</sup> P. سقط.<sup>١٨</sup> P. عند.<sup>١٩</sup> P adds رضي الله عنه.<sup>٢٠</sup> B. الكتاب.<sup>٢١</sup> P om.<sup>٢٣-٢٤</sup> B om.<sup>٢٣-٢٤</sup> B om.<sup>٢٤-٢٥</sup> B om.

إِلَّا مِثْلُهُ وَلَيْسَ لِلْحَنْفِيِّ نَصٌّ عَلَى تَحْرِيهِ<sup>١</sup> لَا مِنَ الْكِتَابِ<sup>٢</sup>  
 وَلَا مِنَ السَّنَّةِ وَلَا مِنْ إِجْمَاعِ الْأُمَّةِ فَإِنْكَارُهُ عَلَى ذَلِكَ  
 إِنْكَارٌ<sup>٣</sup> عَلَى الشَّارِعِ كَمَا قَرَرْنَاهُ<sup>٤</sup> وَكَذَا فِي سَائِرِ الْمَذاهِبِ  
 فَإِنْ قَالَ الْمَذْكُورُ سَلَّمَنَا جَوَازُ ضَرْبِ الدَّفِّ<sup>٥</sup> مِنْ غَيْرِ  
 الصَّنْوَجِ فَإِنَّ دَفَّ الْعَرَبِ<sup>٦</sup> كَانَ كَذَلِكَ وَلَكِنَّ لَا نَسْلَمُ<sup>٧</sup>  
 جَوَازُ ضَرْبِ الدَّفِّ<sup>٨</sup> بِالصَّنْوَجِ قَلَّا قَدْ ثَبَّتَ بِمَا ذَكَرْنَا مِنَ  
 الْأَحَادِيثِ جَوَازُ ضَرْبِ الدَّفِّ<sup>٩</sup> مِنْ غَيْرِ الصَّنْوَجِ وَلَمْ يُرَدْ  
 فِي الصَّنْوَجِ شَيْءٌ<sup>١٠</sup> لَا بِالْتَّحْرِيمِ<sup>١١</sup> وَلَا بِالْكَرَاهِيَّةِ فَبَقِيَ عَلَى  
 الْإِبَاحَةِ فَإِنْ انْضَمَ<sup>١٢</sup> مَبَاحٌ لَمْ يُسْمَعْ إِلَى مَبَاحٍ يُسْمَعْ صَارَ  
 الْكُلُّ مَبَاحًا<sup>١٣</sup> إِنْ لَمْ تَدْلُّ<sup>١٤</sup> قَرِينَةً عَلَى الْجَمْعِ بَيْنَهُمَا<sup>١٥</sup>  
 بِالْتَّحْرِيمِ كَزِوَاجٍ<sup>١٦</sup> لِلْأَخْتِيَنِ فَإِنَّ زِوَاجَ كُلَّ وَاحِدَةٍ مِنْهُمَا  
 عَلَى الْإِنْفَرَادِ<sup>١٧</sup> مَبَاحٌ وَالْجَمْعُ بَيْنَهُمَا حَرَامٌ<sup>١٨</sup>  
 وَأَمَّا الْقَصْبُ الْفَارَسِيُّ فَلَمْ يُرَدْ فِيهِ شَيْءٌ فَبَقِيَ عَلَى  
 الْإِبَاحَةِ وَأَمَّا الْمَزْمَارُ فَنَهَى<sup>١٩</sup> عَنْ سَمَاعِهِ لَا<sup>٢٠</sup> وَرَدَ فِي الْخَبَرِ<sup>٢١</sup>

<sup>١</sup> B. تَحْرِيم.

<sup>٢</sup> B om.

<sup>٣</sup> B.

<sup>٤</sup> B.

<sup>٥</sup> P om.

<sup>٦</sup> P om.

<sup>٧</sup> P.

<sup>٨</sup> B.

<sup>٩</sup> P om.

<sup>١٠</sup> P.

<sup>١١</sup> P adds.

<sup>١٢</sup> B.

<sup>١٣</sup> B.

<sup>١٤</sup> P om.

<sup>١٥</sup> P adds.

<sup>١٦</sup> B.

<sup>١٧</sup> B.

<sup>١٨</sup> P adds.

<sup>١٩</sup> B.

<sup>٢٠</sup> B.

<sup>١</sup> B. إِنْكَارٌ.

<sup>٢</sup> P. الْكِتَابِ.

<sup>٣</sup> P. الضَّرْبُ بِالدَّفِّ.

<sup>٤</sup> P. الصَّنْوَجِ.

<sup>٥</sup> P. الْأَحَادِيثِ.

<sup>٦</sup> P. الْمَذْكُورُ.

<sup>٧</sup> P. سَلَّمَنَا.

<sup>٨</sup> P. جَوَازُ.

<sup>٩</sup> P. فَإِنَّ دَفَّ الْعَرَبِ.

<sup>١٠</sup> P. كَانَ كَذَلِكَ.

<sup>١١</sup> P. وَلَكِنَّ لَا نَسْلَمُ.

<sup>١٢</sup> P. جَوَازُ ضَرْبِ الدَّفِّ.

<sup>١٣</sup> P. بِالصَّنْوَجِ.

<sup>١٤</sup> P. لَا بِالْتَّحْرِيمِ.

<sup>١٥</sup> P. وَلَا بِالْكَرَاهِيَّةِ.

<sup>١٦</sup> P. فَبَقِيَ عَلَى إِبَاحَةِ.

<sup>١٧</sup> P. إِنْضَمَ.

<sup>١٨</sup> P. كَمَا قَرَرْنَاهُ.

<sup>١٩</sup> P. وَلَكِنَّ لَا نَسْلَمُ.

<sup>٢٠</sup> P. فَإِنَّ زِوَاجَ كُلَّ وَاحِدَةٍ مِنْهُمَا.

<sup>٢١</sup> P. كَزِوَاجٍ.

<sup>٢٢</sup> P. مَبَاحٌ.

<sup>٢٣</sup> P. وَالْجَمْعُ بَيْنَهُمَا حَرَامٌ.

<sup>٤</sup> P. قَدْرَنَاهُ.

<sup>٥</sup> P. الْأَرْفَ.

<sup>٦</sup> P. يُرَدْ.

<sup>٧</sup> P. كَذَلِكَ.

<sup>٨</sup> P. يُرَدْ.

<sup>٩</sup> P. إِلَّا.

<sup>١٠</sup> P. بَيْنَهُمَا.

<sup>١١</sup> P. فَإِنَّ زِوَاجَ كُلَّ وَاحِدَةٍ مِنْهُمَا.

<sup>١٢</sup> P. كَمَا قَرَرْنَاهُ.

<sup>١٣</sup> P. وَلَكِنَّ لَا نَسْلَمُ.

<sup>١٤</sup> P. فَإِنَّ زِوَاجَ كُلَّ وَاحِدَةٍ مِنْهُمَا.

<sup>١٥</sup> P. كَزِوَاجٍ.

<sup>١٦</sup> P. مَبَاحٌ.

<sup>١٧</sup> P. وَالْجَمْعُ بَيْنَهُمَا حَرَامٌ.

<sup>١٨</sup> P. فَإِنَّ زِوَاجَ كُلَّ وَاحِدَةٍ مِنْهُمَا.

<sup>١٩</sup> P. كَمَا قَرَرْنَاهُ.

<sup>٢٠</sup> P. وَلَكِنَّ لَا نَسْلَمُ.

<sup>٢١</sup> P. فَإِنَّ زِوَاجَ كُلَّ وَاحِدَةٍ مِنْهُمَا.

<sup>٢٢</sup> P. كَزِوَاجٍ.

<sup>٢٣</sup> P. مَبَاحٌ.

أَنَّهُ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَسَلَّمَ سَمِعَ صَوْتَ الْمَزَمَارِ فَسَدَ  
أَذْنِيهِ

وَأَيْضًا يُلْزِمُ لِنَكْرِ<sup>2</sup> الرَّقْصَ وَالسَّمَاعَ وَضَرْبَ الدَّفَّ  
وَسَمَاعَ الْفَنَاءِ مُحَارَبَةً<sup>3</sup> اللَّهُ تَعَالَى وَمَنْ حَارَبَ اللَّهَ تَعَالَى  
كَفَرَ بِالْإِتْقَانِ<sup>4</sup> وَذَلِكَ أَنَّهُ<sup>4</sup> وَرَدَ فِي الْخَبْرِ الصَّحِيفِ مِنْ  
عَادِي لِي<sup>5</sup> وَلِيَتَا فَقَدْ<sup>6</sup> بَارَزَنِي بِالْمُحَارَبَةِ<sup>7</sup> وَلَا خَلَفَ بَيْنِ  
الْمُجَهَّدِينَ<sup>8</sup> فِي وَجْدَانِ الْأُولَيَاِ<sup>9</sup> بَيْنَهُمْ وَاتَّقَنَ<sup>10</sup> أَهْلَ جَمِيعِ  
الْأَعْصَارِ<sup>10</sup> عَلَى صَحَّةِ<sup>9</sup> وَلَايَةِ الْجَنِيدِ وَالشَّبَلِيِّ<sup>11</sup> وَمَعْرُوفُ  
الْكَرْخِيِّ<sup>11</sup> وَعَبْدِ اللَّهِ بْنِ خَفِيفِ<sup>12</sup> وَغَيْرِهِمْ مِمَّنْ هُمْ مَذَكُورِينَ  
فِي تَذَكِّرَةِ<sup>12</sup> الْأُولَيَاِ<sup>13</sup> وَغَيْرِ ذَلِكِ وَقَدْ صَحَّ<sup>14</sup> عَنْهُمْ فِي  
سَيِّرِهِمْ<sup>15</sup> أَنَّهُمْ تَوَاجَدُوا فِي السَّمَاعِ وَرَقَصُوا لِنَقْضِ<sup>16</sup> مَا  
سُوِّيَ اللَّهُ عَنْ قُلُوبِهِمْ<sup>17</sup> فَنَحْرَمَ السَّمَاعَ مُطْلِقًا<sup>18</sup> فَكَانَهُ  
قَالَ إِنَّ هُؤُلَاءِ الْأُولَيَاِ<sup>19</sup> فَلَمُوا حِرَاماً وَمَنْ نَسَبَهُمْ إِلَى

<sup>1-2</sup> B جواز P adds ; المكر B المكر <sup>2</sup> عليه السلام .  
المحاربة P <sup>3</sup> . فَنَدَ B <sup>4</sup> . عَادَ إِلَيْهِ P <sup>5</sup> . وَلَذِكَ P <sup>6</sup> . مُحَارَبَةً<sup>7</sup> .  
أَهْلَ جَمِيعِ الْأَعْصَارِ B . جَمِيعُ أَهْلِ الْأَعْصَارِ P <sup>10-10</sup> . مِنْ P <sup>9</sup> . الْمُجَهَّدِينَ B .  
وَتَذَكِّرَةً P <sup>13</sup> . رِسَالَةُ الْقَشْبَرِيِّ P adds <sup>12</sup> . الْحَنْفَيُّ<sup>11</sup> .  
سَرِّهِمْ<sup>15</sup> . صَحَّتْ P <sup>16</sup> .  
لَعْبَيْنَ B <sup>17</sup> . لَقْنَ P not clear . Looks like .  
مُطْلِقاً B <sup>18</sup> . قُلُوبَهِمْ P <sup>19</sup> . فَكَانَهُ B .

مباشرة فعل الحرام عاداهم قوله <sup>١</sup> واعتقادا ومن عاداهم  
بارز الحق تعالى <sup>٣</sup> ومن بارز الحق تعالى كفر بالاتفاق <sup>٥</sup>  
فقد باء بغضب من الله وما واه جهنم وبئس المصير <sup>٦</sup>  
فإذا ثبت ممَا ذكرناه <sup>٨</sup> من التقريرات <sup>٩</sup> والدلائل  
والأحاديث أن السباع مباح مطلقا وأن منكره إمما  
كافر <sup>١٠</sup> أو فاسق <sup>١١</sup> وهذا أشد استحبابا في حق المريدين  
واجب في حق أولياء الله تعالى بالنسبة إلى مقاماتهم <sup>١٣</sup>  
لأنهم المجردون عمما سوى الله إلى الله تعالى <sup>١٧</sup> قال الله  
تعالى يريدون وجهه فكلما <sup>١٩</sup> وجدوا شيئا من الصور <sup>٢٠</sup>  
حملوه على المعاني الغيبية كما قال صلى الله عليه وسلم <sup>٢٣</sup>  
في حق أسيد بن الحضير حين قال يا رسول الله <sup>٢٤</sup> كنت <sup>٢٥</sup>  
في حق أسيد بن الحضير حين قال يا رسول الله <sup>٢٦</sup>

## الفعل B ١

<sup>2</sup> P adds فعلاً.

<sup>3</sup> P adds المغاربة.

4 B. J. B.

٥ B مالا-تفاوت

6-6 B 69, P 1969.

<sup>7</sup> B, C و مَا وَاهِيَ. P وَمَا وَاهِيَ. Only C quotes Qur. viii, 16, accurately.

• BIS

• R. P. - 1

10 P. I. S.

12 Following

51 B. J.

۱۳۸

14 R 114

الصـاير F. 15 B 5

واجہ B

بالسبة بـ A او سـ B .

18 P adds

## برندون وحدهه P

## وَكَلَمَاتٍ مَا يَعْلَمُونَ

<sup>21</sup> P قصداً.

<sup>22</sup> P adds رسول الله.

٣-٢٣ B عليه السلام.

صين P، اسید من حضیر B

-۲۵ B رسول پر

أَقْرَأْ<sup>١</sup> الْبَارِحة سُورَة الْكَهْف فَإِذَا فَوْقَ رَأْسِي سَحَابَةٌ فِيهَا  
مُثْلِي الْمَصَابِيح قَالَ<sup>٢</sup> تَلْكَ<sup>٣</sup> السَّكِينَة وَلَمْ يَجْعَلِ السَّحَابَة عَلَى  
حَالِهَا وَالسَّكِينَة فَعِيلَةٌ<sup>٤</sup> مِنَ السَّكُون<sup>٥</sup> وَهُوَ الْأَطْمَشْنَان  
إِلَى أَنوارِ عَالَمِ الْغَيْب الْوَارِدَة عَلَيْهِ<sup>٦</sup> بِسَبَبِ تَرَدُّدِهِ  
وَمَرُورِهِ<sup>٧</sup> عَلَى صُورَهَا<sup>٨</sup> وَهِيَ أَفْاظُ الْقُرْآن فَكَذَلِكَ  
أُولَيَاءُ اللَّهِ تَعَالَى<sup>٩</sup> يَحْمِلُونَ الصُّورَ عَلَى الْمَعْانِي لِتَرْكِهِم  
مِرَاتِبُ الْصُّورِ وَسِيرِهِمْ فِي مِرَاتِبِ الْمَعَارِف<sup>١٠</sup> فَالْفَدْ<sup>١١</sup>  
عِنْهُمْ إِشَارَةٌ إِلَى دَائِرَةِ الْأَكَوَان<sup>١٢</sup> وَالْجَلْدِ الرَّاكِبِ عَلَيْهِ<sup>١٣</sup>  
إِشَارَةٌ<sup>١٤</sup> إِلَى الْوُجُودِ الْمُطْلَقِ وَالضَّرْبِ الْوَارِدِ عَلَى الدَّفَ  
إِشَارَةٌ إِلَى وَرُودِ الْوَارِدَاتِ الْإِلَهِيَّةِ مِنْ بَاطِنِ الْبَطُونِ عَلَى  
الْوُجُودِ الْمَطَاقِ لِإِخْرَاجِ الْأَشْيَاءِ الْذَّاتِيَّةِ مِنْ الْبَاطِنِ إِلَى  
الظَّاهِرِ وَالْجَلَاجِلِ الْخَمْسَةِ إِشَارَةٌ إِلَى الْمَرَاتِبِ النَّبُوَيَّةِ<sup>١٥</sup>  
وَالْمَرَاتِبِ الْوَلَائِيَّةِ وَالْمَرَاتِبِ الرَّسَالِيَّةِ وَالْمَرَاتِبِ الْخَلَافِيَّةِ<sup>١٦</sup>  
وَالْمَرَاتِبِ الْإِمَامِيَّةِ وَصُوتِهَا<sup>١٧</sup> مُجْمُوعًا إِشَارَةٌ إِلَى ظَهُورِ<sup>١٨</sup>  
الْتَّجَلَّيَاتِ الْإِلَهِيَّةِ<sup>١٩</sup> وَالْعِلْمِ الْمُطْلَقِ بِوَاسِطَةِ<sup>٢٠</sup> هَذِهِ الْمَعْانِي

<sup>١</sup> أَقْرَأْ B. <sup>٢</sup> عَلَيْهِ السَّلَام P adds. <sup>٣</sup> مَلِك B. <sup>٤</sup> فَعْلَه B. <sup>٥</sup> مِنْهُمْ P om. <sup>٦</sup> وَتَرَدَّهُ P. <sup>٧</sup> لَسْبِي P. <sup>٨</sup> صُورِهِمْ P. <sup>٩</sup> بِسَبَبِهِ P om. <sup>١٠</sup> الْمَعَارِف B. <sup>١١</sup> وَالْجَلْدَةِ الرَّاكِبَةِ عَلَيْهَا P. <sup>١٢</sup> الْأَكَوَان B. <sup>١٣</sup> الْمَعْانِي B. <sup>١٤</sup> الْجَلَاجِل P. <sup>١٥</sup> الْأَكَوَان B. <sup>١٦</sup> الْجَلَاجِل P. <sup>١٧</sup> الْحَيَاة B. <sup>١٨</sup> وَصَوْنَهَا B. <sup>١٩</sup> الْحَلَافَة P. <sup>٢٠</sup> بِوَاسِطَتِهِ P.

في قلوب الأولياء وأهل الكمال ونفس المعنى صورة رتبة الحق تعالى وتقديس إِذْ هو محرك الأشياء وموجدها ومقننها، وصوت المغني إِشارة إلى الحياة الربانية الواردة من باطن البطنون إلى مراتب الأرواح والقلوب والأسرار والقصب إِشارة إلى ذات الإنسانية والأثقب التسعة إِشارة إلى منافذه في الظاهر وهي تسعة الأذنان والمنخران والعينان والقلم والدبر وقوعة أثقب أخرى مقلوبة من الظاهر إلى الباطن وهي الإبطان وبطن المرفقين وتحت الركبتين وبطن الكوعين والسررة وتسعة مراتب في الباطن وهي القلب والعقل والروح والنفس والسر والجوهر الإنساني واللطيفة الذاكرة والفؤاد والشفاف والنفس النافذ في القصب إِشارة إلى نفوذ نور الله تعالى في قصب ذات الإنسان وتحركهم في السماع.

الصورة إلى رتب	<sup>1-2</sup> P	<sup>3</sup> P om.	<sup>4</sup> كما	<sup>5</sup> ومنشها
الرمانية	B	B.	B.	B.
العينان	P	باطن	B.	السعه
والمنخران	P	والاذنان	P.	B.
الظاهر	B	آخر	P.	والشفاف
والركبتين	P	الظاهر	B.	P.
والشفاف	P	والشفاف	Following C.	والعواذ
والعواذ	P	النافذ	P.	P.
الناسان	B	تفود	P.	الناسان
			<sup>10</sup> B om.	<sup>20</sup> B.

إِشارةٌ إِلَى تذكاراتٍ طيِّرِ الحَقِيقَةِ الْإِنْسَانِيَّةِ <sup>٢</sup> فِي  
 مَقَامٍ <sup>١</sup>الْخُطَابِ <sup>٣</sup>الْأَزْلِيِّ <sup>٤</sup>الْأَسْتَ بِرَبِّكُمْ <sup>٥</sup>وَاضْطِرَابِ  
 الرُّوحِ لِكَسْرِ قَفْصِ الْجَسْمِ وَرَجْوَعِهِ <sup>٦</sup>إِلَى الْوَطَنِ  
 الْحَقِيقِيِّ <sup>٧</sup>حِيثُ قَالَ حَبَّ الْوَطَنَ مِنَ الْإِيَّانِ <sup>٨</sup>أَيِّ وَطَنٌ  
 الْأَرْوَاحُ الَّذِي أُوجِدَ رُوحُهُ فِيهِ <sup>٩</sup>حِيثُ قَالَ وَنَفَخْتُ فِيهِ  
 مِنْ رُوحِي <sup>١٠</sup>وَالرَّقْصُ إِشارةٌ إِلَى جَوْلَانِ الرُّوحِ حَوْلَ  
 دَائِرَةِ الْمُوْجُودَاتِ <sup>١١</sup>لِقَبْوِ آثَارِ التَّجْلِيَّاتِ <sup>١٢</sup>وَالْتَّنْزِيلَاتِ  
 وَهَذَا حَالُ الْعَارِفِ وَالْفَتَلِ <sup>١٣</sup>إِشارةٌ إِلَى وَقْفِ الرُّوحِ  
 مَعَ اللَّهِ بِسْرَهُ وَوُجُودِهِ وَجَوْلَانِ نَظَرِهِ وَفَكْرِهِ وَنَفْوَذِهِ <sup>١٤</sup>فِي  
 مَرَاتِبِ الْمُوْجُودَاتِ وَهَذَا <sup>١٥</sup>حَالُ الْحَقِيقِ <sup>١٦</sup>فَطَفَرَهُ إِلَى  
 فَوْقِ <sup>١٧</sup>إِشارةٌ إِلَى اِنْجِذَابِهِ <sup>١٨</sup>مِنَ الْمَقَامِ الْإِنْسَانِيِّ <sup>١٩</sup>إِلَى الْمَقَامِ  
 الْأَحْدِيِّ <sup>٢٠</sup>وَأَكْتَسَابِ الْكَائِنَاتِ مِنْهُ آثَارًا رُوحَانِيَّةً  
 وَأَمْدَادًا نُورَانِيَّةً <sup>٢١</sup>فَإِذَا خَرَجَ رُوحُهُ عَنِ الْحِجَابِ وَوَصَلَ

<sup>١</sup> P تذكاراتهم.

<sup>٢-٣</sup> B om.

<sup>٣</sup> B خطاب.

<sup>٤</sup> B om. P adds في وقت.

<sup>٥</sup> B برّكم.

<sup>٦</sup> B ورجوعه.

<sup>٧-٨</sup> P repeats.

<sup>٨</sup> P منه.

<sup>٩</sup> P om.

<sup>١١</sup> P adds الموجودة.

<sup>١٢</sup> B .وال فعل.

<sup>١٠</sup> P adds .والتعلبات.

<sup>١٥</sup> P adds سر.

<sup>١٦</sup> B وطرق الدفوف.

<sup>١٧</sup> P adds .وَهَذَا B وفوزه.

<sup>١٨</sup> P adds .وَقُودُهُ B .

<sup>١٩</sup> B بواسطة adds :

<sup>٢٠</sup> P .وَأَكْتَسَابِهِ P .

<sup>٢١</sup> P .انْجِذَابِهِ P .

إِلَى مِرْاتِبِ الصَّوَابِ كَشَفَ رَأْسَهُ فَإِذَا تَجَرَّدَ عَنْ مَا  
 سُوِيَ اللَّهُ<sup>١</sup> وَاتَّصَلَ إِلَى اللَّهِ تَعَالَى<sup>٢</sup> خَلَعَ ثِيَابَهُ فَانْكَانَ  
 الْمَغْنِيِّ صَاحِبَ حَالٍ وَمَقَامٍ أَلْقَى<sup>٣</sup> إِلَيْهِ<sup>٤</sup> ثِيَابَهُ وَإِنْ لَمْ يَكُنْ  
 كَذَلِكَ<sup>٥</sup> فَإِلَقَاهُ إِلَيْهِ ظُلْمٌ لَأَنَّ ثُوبَ<sup>٦</sup> صَاحِبِ الْحَالِ<sup>٧</sup> صُورَةٌ  
 حَالَهُ وَلَا يَسْتَحْقُ قَبْوُلَ حَالَهُ إِلَّا مَنْ هُوَ فِي رَتْبَتِهِ وَإِنْ  
 ارْتَقَ إِلَى مَقَامِ عَلْوَيٍّ وَالْمَغْنِيِّ يَتَكَلَّمُ فِي مَقَامِ سَفْلَيٍّ<sup>٨</sup> أَلْقَى<sup>٩</sup>  
 إِلَيْهِ بِيَتٍ<sup>١٠</sup> مَنَاسِبًا لَحَالِهِ فَإِنْ أَشْكَلَ عَلَيْهِ أَمْرٌ<sup>١١</sup> غَنِيٌّ عَنْهُ  
 وَوَقَفَ حَالَهُ عَلَيْهِ أَخْذُ غَيْرِهِ وَجَالَ<sup>١٢</sup> مَعَهُ لِيَجْتَمِعَ حَالَهُ  
 بِحَالَهُ<sup>١٣</sup> وَتَنَحَّلَ<sup>١٤</sup> عَقْدَتِهِ فَتَقَى<sup>١٥</sup> عَطْشًا وَطَلَبَ شَرْبَ المَاءِ دَلَّ<sup>١٦</sup>  
 عَلَى أَنَّهُ يَقْهَرَ لَأَنَّ مَقَامَ الرُّوحِ مَقْلَمَ الصَّفَاءِ وَعَذَاوَةَ<sup>١٧</sup>  
 مِنَ الْأَنْوَارِ فَإِذَا عَطْشَ دَلَّ<sup>١٨</sup> عَلَى أَنَّهُ رَجَعَ إِلَى مَقَامِ  
 الْجَسَدِ<sup>١٩</sup> إِذْ مَقَامُ الرُّوحِ التَّغْذِيَّ<sup>٢٠</sup> بِالْغَيْبِ فَلَا يَحْتَاجُ إِلَى

<sup>١</sup> P adds. تَعَالَى.	<sup>٢</sup> B om. الْقَا.	<sup>٣</sup> B om. صَوْبَ.
<sup>٤</sup> P. عَلَيْهِ.	<sup>٥</sup> B om. الْقَا.	<sup>٦</sup> B om. وَحَالَ.
<sup>٧</sup> P adds. صُورَةُ الْحَالِ.	<sup>٨</sup> P. فَانَ.	<sup>٧</sup> B om. وَتَنَجَّلِي.
<sup>٩</sup> P. شَيْئًا.	<sup>١١-١١</sup> B. غَيْبِيُّ.	<sup>٨</sup> B. وَعَدَاوَةَ.
<sup>١٢</sup> B. لِجَتَمِعَ.	<sup>١٤</sup> B. حَالَهُ.	<sup>٩</sup> P. مَقَامُ.
<sup>١٦</sup> B. فَتَقَى.	<sup>١٧-١٧</sup> B om., P. وَعَدَاوَةَ.	<sup>١٠-١٠</sup> P. وَمَقَامُ.
<sup>١٨-١٨</sup> B om. وَحَالَ.	<sup>١٩</sup> P om.	<sup>٢١-٢١</sup> P. التَّغْذِيَّ.
<sup>٢١</sup> P adds. وَحَالَ الرُّوحُ.	<sup>٢٢</sup> P. وَلَا.	

الظاهر ومقام الجسد التغدي<sup>١</sup> بالصورة فعند رجوعه<sup>٢</sup> من  
 الغيب إلى الشهادة يطلب الماء وذلك يدل<sup>٣</sup> على النقص  
 وأمّا المعنى المقصود الدال على شرف السماع<sup>٤</sup> فوجوه  
 التناقض من<sup>٥</sup> وجوه أحدهما<sup>٦</sup> أن الأحوال اللاحقة للشيء  
 قسمان حركة وسكون فالحركة صفة الأرواح<sup>٧</sup> والأسرار  
 والسكون<sup>٨</sup> صفة الأجساد والصور الكثيفية والحرارة  
 والتلطيف من لوازم الحركة والجمود والتبديل<sup>٩</sup> من لوازم  
 السكون ولهذا لو بقي الماء في جرته<sup>١٠</sup> ولو كان<sup>١١</sup> كثيراً  
 لتغيير بمرور الزمان وإن كان جارياً قليلاً لم يتغير فإذا أثر<sup>١٢</sup>  
 الصوت الموزون في الباطن حركة<sup>١٣</sup> الروح إلى طلب  
 الارتفاع فتحريك<sup>١٤</sup> الجسد بحركة الروح فيحصل في وجوده  
 حرارة<sup>١٥</sup> فتنحل<sup>١٦</sup> فضلات<sup>١٧</sup> وجوده ويظهر في قلبه آثار  
 مشهودة<sup>١٨</sup> وذلك بفعل<sup>١٩</sup> السماع<sup>٢٠</sup>  
 وثانياً أن<sup>٢١</sup> الفداء الحسني<sup>٢٢</sup> يقوّي الجسد وحصول

<sup>١</sup> B. التغدي.

<sup>٢</sup> P adds ذلك. <sup>٣</sup> B. رجوعه.

<sup>٤</sup> P. دليله. <sup>٥-٦</sup> B. om.

<sup>٦</sup> P. أحدهما. <sup>٧-٨</sup> P. والسكون والأسرار.

<sup>٩</sup> B. وكانت P. والتبديل.

<sup>٩</sup> B. حومة. <sup>١٠</sup> B. حومة.

<sup>١١</sup> B. جارياً. <sup>١٢</sup> P. نزل.

<sup>١١</sup> P. اي. <sup>١٢</sup> P. حركة.

<sup>١٣</sup> B. طلب. <sup>١٤</sup> B. وتحريك.

<sup>١٣-١٤</sup> P. حركة ساكن.

<sup>١٥</sup> B. فقل. <sup>١٦</sup> P. مشهوره.

<sup>٢١</sup> P. om. <sup>٢٢-٢٣</sup> P. الفداء الحسني.

ذلك ب مباشرة الفداء<sup>١</sup> والندا<sup>٢</sup> الروحي<sup>٣</sup> يقوى القلب والسر<sup>٤</sup>  
 وذلك ب مباشرة<sup>٥</sup> آلات<sup>٦</sup> استنزال<sup>٧</sup> الروح<sup>٨</sup> والنور والحياة<sup>٩</sup>  
 من العالم الغيبي<sup>١٠</sup> وهو تحريك الروح بسماع المعاني الغريبة<sup>١١</sup>  
 من الأشعار الرقيقة وترك التمثيلات الكونية<sup>١٢</sup>  
 والانجذاب<sup>١٣</sup> إلى المنازل الروحانية وآلة<sup>١٤</sup> حصول هذه<sup>١٥</sup>  
 الأنوار<sup>١٦</sup> اجتماع الإخوان وطلب المدد من الله الرحمن<sup>١٧</sup>  
 وثالثها أن السماع يجرد<sup>١٨</sup> الشخص عن الأمور<sup>١٩</sup>  
 الظاهرة ويعيله إلى قبول الأنوار والأسرار الباطنة<sup>٢٠</sup>  
 فكلما<sup>٢١</sup> زاد وجده في السماع زاد سيره وطيره في عالم<sup>٢٢</sup>  
 الأرواح وعند كثرة ازدياده يرق<sup>٢٣</sup> قلبه ويقبل<sup>٢٤</sup> من<sup>٢٥</sup>  
 آثار فيض الله تعالى وتجلياته فيحصل<sup>٢٦</sup> له مقام الوصول<sup>٢٧</sup>  
 من غير رياضة<sup>٢٨</sup> جديدة<sup>٢٩</sup>

ورابعها أن الصوت هو<sup>٣٠</sup> نافذ<sup>٣١</sup> من الظاهر إلى<sup>٣٢</sup>  
 الباطن ويتصل بالقلب<sup>٣٣</sup> فينبسط القلب والروح بواسطته<sup>٣٤</sup>

<sup>١</sup> P om., B الفداء.

<sup>٤</sup> P والات.

<sup>٨</sup> P والانجذاب.

<sup>11</sup> P مجرد.

<sup>15</sup> P يقبل.

<sup>19</sup> P رابعها.

<sup>٢</sup> P والندا.

<sup>٦</sup> P واستنزال.

<sup>٩</sup> P حضوره هذه الانواع.

<sup>12</sup> P وكلما.

<sup>16</sup> P رياضه.

<sup>20</sup> P نافذ.

<sup>٣</sup> P adds الفدا والندا.

<sup>٧</sup> B التربية.

<sup>10</sup> B الرحمن.

<sup>14</sup> P رق.

<sup>18</sup> B حدية.

<sup>22</sup> P في القلب.

اختلاف النفثات الموزوقة وبعد المعانى الواردة على  
 الروح في مراتب الموجودات<sup>١</sup> فإذا اتبع الروح الجسد  
 في الحركة وتبع الجسد الروح في الحضور والنور والسرور  
 تجرد<sup>٢</sup> عن التوهّمات والتخيّلات فتنفذ<sup>٣</sup> في القوى  
 الجسدية المعانى المتصلة<sup>٤</sup> في الروح فينجذب<sup>٥</sup> الجسد إلى  
 مقام الروح ويرتفع الحجاب فيشاهد<sup>٦</sup> تلك المعانى  
 والحقائق دفعة وهذا مقام الكمال العيانى الذي لا  
 يحصل بكثير<sup>٧</sup> من<sup>٨</sup> الرياضات  
 وخامسها أن السّماع سكون<sup>٩</sup> في الباطن وحركة في  
 الظاهر<sup>١٠</sup> وما سواه من العبادات غير الصوم حرفة في  
<sup>١١</sup> الظاهر والحركة في الظاهر تناسب الكثرة فكلما  
 كثرت الحركة في السّماع وقوى السكون في القلب  
<sup>١٢</sup> تجرد عما سوى الله تعالى فظهر<sup>١٣</sup> فيه الوجود وانجذب<sup>١٤</sup>

<sup>١</sup> P. وتسعد.

<sup>٢</sup> P adds. والقلب.

<sup>٣</sup> P. وتجرد.

<sup>٤</sup> B. فتنفذ P.

<sup>٥</sup> B. المفصله.

<sup>٦</sup> P. فينجذب.

<sup>٧</sup> B. فيشاهد.

<sup>٨</sup> B. مكثير.

<sup>٩</sup> P adds. انواع.

<sup>١٠</sup> B wrote first مكتوب and blurred the word somewhat in changing it into سكون.

<sup>١١</sup> B. والحركة في الظاهر and adds الطاهر.

<sup>١٢</sup> B. فلما P. وكلما B.

<sup>١٣</sup> B. om.

<sup>١٤</sup> B, P. ظهر.

<sup>١٥</sup> P. وانجذب.

١. إلى الجناب الأحدي فيشاهد بنظر السر العالم  
 ٢. الإلهية ٣. ويدرك أسرارا رباتية ٤. لا يحيط بها  
 ٥. العقول والأفهام وأمتا الأركان الثلاثة كالصلوة والحج  
 والشهادتين فإنها وإن كانت حركة في الظاهر والباطن  
 ولكن قد يظهر من بين الحركتين سكون روحي  
 وجهي ٧. يؤدي صاحبه إلى الفداء والبقاء وأمتا الصوم  
 فإنها سكون في الظاهر والباطن وقد يخرج من بين  
 السكونين حركة من الله بالله ٩. لله وذلك هو الإطلاق  
 ١١. التام ١٢. والحكم العام فإذا سرّ السماع براتبه مشتمل على  
 ١٣. حقائق الأركان الخمسة فالصلوة والحج ١٤. والشهادتان من  
 ١٥. مراتب ظاهرة والصوم والزكوة من مراتب باطنية  
 وقد يحصل للإنسان في السماع من الكمالات ما لا  
 يحصل بالمواطبة على كثير ١٦. من العبادات  
 وسدسها أن السماع يشتمل على الأحوال الكمالية

١. بـ B.	٢. ويندرك أسرار رباتية B.	٣. اللهية B.	٤. الفوالم P.
٤. P om.	٥. ووجهي P.	٦. والظاهر P.	٧. فسر هذا P.
٨. والزكوة P.	٩. بالله P.	١٠. يخرج B.	١١. ما سواه P.
١٢. والحج B.	١٣. والركوة B.	١٤. والحج P.	

التي هي <sup>1</sup>نهايات <sup>2</sup>القامات فسينه وميمه يشير <sup>3</sup>إلى السم <sup>4</sup>  
 يعني أن <sup>5</sup>السماع كالسم يموت <sup>6</sup>الشخص عن التعلقات  
 الفيরية <sup>7</sup>ويوصله إلى <sup>8</sup>القامات الفيبرية <sup>9</sup>وعينه وميمه  
 يشير <sup>10</sup>إلى مع يعني أن <sup>11</sup>السماع يصل <sup>12</sup>الشخص إلى  
 المعية الذاتية الإلهية <sup>13</sup>قال عليه السلام لي مع الله وقت  
 لا يسعني فيه ملك مقرب ولا نبي <sup>14</sup>مرسل وسينه وميمه  
 وألفه <sup>15</sup>يشير <sup>16</sup>إلى السماء ليشعر <sup>17</sup>أن <sup>18</sup>السماع يصير  
 الشخص علويا سماويا ويخرج عن المراتب السفلية وألفه  
 وميمه يشير <sup>19</sup>إلى الأم ليعلم <sup>20</sup>أن صاحب السماع أم كل  
 من سواه <sup>21</sup>فيأخذ المدد من الفيبر بروحانيته <sup>22</sup>ويفيض  
 على ما سواه <sup>23</sup>الحياة <sup>24</sup>والعلم المشير إليها <sup>25</sup>كلمة ماء <sup>26</sup>وعينه  
 وميمه تشير <sup>27</sup>إلى عم <sup>28</sup>أي يعم صاحب السماع <sup>29</sup>بروحانيته

<sup>1</sup> B. نهاية.

<sup>2</sup> For gender and number of this verb, cf. Wright, *Grammar*, i, 181B; ii, 297B.

<sup>3</sup> P adds 4.

<sup>4</sup> العيبة.

<sup>5</sup> B. شير.

<sup>6</sup> P. معنى.

<sup>7</sup> B. يصل.

<sup>8</sup> P adds كـ.

<sup>9</sup> P om.

<sup>10</sup> B. تشير.

<sup>11</sup> P. يشعر.

<sup>12</sup> B. يضر.

<sup>13</sup> P adds ذلك.

<sup>14</sup> P adds تشير.

<sup>15</sup> P. ما.

<sup>16</sup> P adds من.

<sup>17</sup> P adds روحانيته.

<sup>18</sup> P adds من.

<sup>19</sup> B. إليها.

<sup>20</sup> B. إليها.

<sup>21</sup> P adds ما.

<sup>22</sup> P adds ما.

<sup>23</sup> B. روحانيته.

<sup>24</sup> P adds روحانيته.

<sup>25</sup> P adds روحانيته.

<sup>26</sup> P adds روحانيته.

<sup>27</sup> B. روحانيته.

<sup>28</sup> P adds روحانيته.

العلويات وبحياة قلبه الانسانيات وبنور نفسه الزكية<sup>١</sup>  
 الانسانيات وغير ذلك من الأحوال<sup>٢</sup> فإذاً صاحب السماع  
 يرتقي إلى المقامات العالية والنفحات<sup>٣</sup> الربانية التي لا  
 يصل إليها بآلف اجتهد وأكمل رياضات<sup>٤</sup> وفوائد السماع  
 تبلغ إلى مائة فائدة ومائة ألف حال يجدها صاحب الذوق  
 والوجود والبصيرة<sup>٥</sup> ولا ينكر السماع إلا أعمى القلب  
 عديم النور كثير الحجاب غافلا عن الله تعالى مائلا إلى  
 النفس والهوى قال الله<sup>٦</sup> تعالى وإذا سمعوا ما أنزل إلى  
 الرسول ترى أعينهم تفيض من الدمع مما عرروا من  
 الحق يقولون ربنا آمنا فاكتبنا مع الشاهدين وما لنا لا  
 نؤمن بالله وما جاءنا من الحق ونطمع أن يدخلنا ربنا مع  
 القوم الصالحين

الخاتمة في بيان كيفية السماع المعتبر عند الأولياء  
 أرباب<sup>٧</sup> الأحوال والمقامات لتحريرك أرواحهم<sup>٨</sup> إلى عالم  
 القدس وتذكارهم مقام الأنس

١. الركبة B.

٢. الربانية B.

٣. بـ om.

٤. الجثمانية P.

٥. ما P adds.

٦. بـ om.

٧. المراتب الغيبية P.

٨. رياضات B.

٩. وارباب P.

١٠. والنفحات P.

١١. واليقين P.

١٢. احوالهم P.

فإذا أرادوا ذلك اجتمعوا ضحوة النهار<sup>1</sup> بعد الفراغ  
 من صلوة الضحى<sup>2</sup> أو بعد العشاء<sup>3</sup> بعد الفراغ من وردهم  
 قراءة كان أو ذكراً<sup>4</sup> وأية<sup>5</sup> عبادة<sup>6</sup> كانت فإذا قعدوا قرأ<sup>7</sup>  
 أرائهم صوتاً<sup>8</sup> مثل<sup>9</sup> وينجح<sup>10</sup> الله الذين<sup>11</sup> أتقوا بعفازتهم<sup>12</sup> لا  
 يمسهم السوء ولا هم يحزنون إلى قوله تعالى<sup>13</sup> وكن من  
 الشاكرين أو<sup>14</sup> إنَّ المتقين في جنات وعيون آخذين<sup>15</sup>  
 ما آتاهم ربهم<sup>16</sup> إنَّهم كانوا قبل ذلك<sup>17</sup> محسنين إلى  
 قوله تعالى<sup>18</sup> تتطقون<sup>19</sup> أو<sup>20</sup> والسماء بنيناها بأيدي وإنا<sup>21</sup>  
 لموسعون إلى قوله تعالى<sup>22</sup> ففروا إلى الله<sup>23</sup> إني لكم  
 منه نذير مبين أو<sup>24</sup> ألم ترَ أنَّ الله أنزل من السماء ما  
 فتصبح الأرض مخضرة<sup>25</sup> إِنَّ الله لطيف خير وأشباه  
 ذلك وفي الجملة<sup>26</sup> يقرأ آيات دالة على طلب الترقى  
<sup>28</sup> والازدياد والعنایة والحمایة<sup>27</sup> ثم يتكلّم<sup>28</sup> الشيخ على معنى

<sup>1</sup> P. الصبح<sup>2-3</sup> P. بعد. نهار.

<sup>4-5</sup> B. قراءة وذكراً.

<sup>6-8</sup> P. وقرأ فوقهم صوتاً مثلاً.

<sup>11</sup> B. الدين. <sup>12</sup> P. بعفازتهم.

<sup>15</sup> B. آخذين. <sup>16</sup> B. ربهم.

<sup>19</sup> B, P. يتطقون. <sup>20</sup> P. om.

<sup>23</sup> P. om. <sup>24</sup> بعفازتهم.

<sup>27</sup> B. يتكلّم.

<sup>3-5</sup> P. من.

<sup>6</sup> B, P. عبارة.

<sup>9</sup> B. صوتناً.

<sup>12</sup> B. om.

<sup>17</sup> B. ذلك.

<sup>21</sup> B. om.

<sup>25</sup> P. الحكمة.

<sup>4</sup> P. adds من.

<sup>7</sup> P. عبارة.

<sup>10</sup> B. وينجح.

<sup>14</sup> P. لو قرأ.

<sup>18</sup> B. om.

<sup>22</sup> P. om.

<sup>26</sup> B. والحمایة.

هذه الآيات <sup>١</sup> بما يليق بمقام السلوك فيقول قال رسول الله صلّى الله عليه وسلم إن للقرآن ظهراً وبطناً وحداً ومطلاعاً فظاهر هذه الآيات في الأكوان لأهل الاعتبار وباطنها في الإنسان لأهل الكشف والأسرار فمعنى هذه الآية وينجي <sup>٢</sup> الله أي أنقذ <sup>٣</sup> الذين اتقوا مراتب <sup>٤</sup> النفس والهوى وخرجوا عن المowanع من الدفع <sup>٥</sup> والالتواء فنجاهم الله تعالى من التعلق بما سوى الله <sup>٦</sup> والانجذاب <sup>٧</sup> إلى الله تعالى <sup>٨</sup> وقبول التعريفات الإلهية من غير واسطة حيث قال الله تعالى <sup>٩</sup> واتقوا الله <sup>١٠</sup> ويعلّمكم الله وكل عقولهم بالحكمة والمعرفة وكل قلوبهم <sup>١١</sup> بالأحوال <sup>١٢</sup> والأذواق <sup>١٣</sup> والماجيد <sup>١٤</sup> وكل نقوسهم <sup>١٥</sup> بالأعمال الصالحة <sup>١٦</sup> والأخلاق الزكية <sup>١٧</sup> لحمل <sup>١٨</sup> كل موجود على مراد الله تعالى <sup>١٩</sup> ثم ردهم من الحق إلى الخلق <sup>٢٠</sup> يستنزل بواسطتهم آثار الصفات الإلهية <sup>٢١</sup> من الحياة والعلم

<sup>١</sup> B الآية.

<sup>٢</sup> P ما.

<sup>٣</sup> ظهرا B.

<sup>٤</sup> P الكشف.

<sup>٥</sup> P في حق.

<sup>٦</sup> B وينجي.

<sup>٧</sup> B اتفى الله P يهدي الله.

<sup>٨</sup> P امره.

<sup>٩</sup> P النّفوس.

<sup>١٠</sup> B والانجذاب <sup>١١</sup> P adds. تعالى <sup>١٢</sup> P . الرفع.

<sup>١٣</sup> B om.

<sup>١٤-١٥</sup> B om. <sup>١٦</sup> B والادوات والماجيد <sup>١٧</sup> B . قلوبهم <sup>١٨-١٩</sup> B . الركيه <sup>٢٠</sup> P om.

<sup>١٩</sup> B فتحمل P.

<sup>٢١-٢٢</sup> P om. <sup>٢٣</sup> P . تستيل بواطنهم <sup>٢٤</sup> P om.

إِلَى غَيْرِهِمْ خَيْنَ مَفَارِقَهُمُ الْحَضْرَةُ الْأَلْوَهِيَّةُ<sup>21</sup> بِالْعُقْلِ  
 وَالنَّفْسِ وَتَعْلُقَهُمْ بِمَا سَوْيَ اللَّهِ تَعَالَى<sup>1</sup> لِرَؤْيَةِ آثَارُ أَفْعَالِهِ  
 وَإِكْمَالُ<sup>3</sup> مَرَاتِبِ مَعْقُولَاتِهِ لَا يَسْتَهِمُ<sup>4</sup> بِهَذَا التَّعْلُقِ  
 الْعَارِضِيَّ<sup>5</sup> السَّوْءُ<sup>6</sup> أَيْ بَعْدَ وَاحْتِجَابِ مِنَ الْحَضْرَةِ  
 الْأَحَدِيَّةِ إِذْ هُمْ مَعَ اللَّهِ بِسُرْرَهُ<sup>8</sup> وَرُوحِهِمْ وَمَعَ الْخَلْقِ<sup>9</sup>  
 بِحَسْبِهِمْ وَنَفْسِهِمْ<sup>10</sup> وَلَا هُمْ يَحْزَنُونَ لِعَدَمِ ذَهَابِ مَا عِنْدَهُمْ<sup>10</sup>  
 مِنَ الْمَنَازِلِ وَالْمَقَامَاتِ وَالْأَحْوَالِ

وَيَقُولُ عَلَى الْمُثَلِّثِ الثَّانِي إِنَّ الْمَتَّقِينَ بَرَكَ مَا سَوْيَ<sup>11</sup>  
 اللَّهِ<sup>11</sup> وَالْأَنْجَذَابِ إِلَيْهِ سَرَّاً وَعَلَانِيَةً فِي جَنَّاتِ الْمَعَارِفِ<sup>12</sup>  
 وَالْعُلُومِ الْفَيِّيَّةِ<sup>12</sup> أَخْذِينَ مِنَ اللَّهِ مَا آتَاهُمْ مِنَ التَّجَلِّيَّاتِ<sup>12</sup>  
 وَالْتَّعْرِيفَاتِ<sup>13</sup> إِنَّهُمْ كَانُوا قَبْلَ ذَلِكَ أَيْ<sup>13</sup> فِي حَالِ<sup>14</sup> السُّلُوكِ<sup>14</sup>  
 وَالسِّيرِ وَالْطَّلْبِ مُحَسِّنِينَ مَعَ نَفْوَسِهِمْ بِالْتَّزَامِ الْأَحْكَامِ

<sup>1</sup> B om.<sup>2</sup> B اَمَار.<sup>3</sup> والكِمال.<sup>4</sup> يَسْتَهِمُ P.<sup>5</sup> بِهَذَا B.<sup>6</sup> الْقَارِضِيَّ P.<sup>7</sup> الْوَ P.<sup>8</sup> الْحَقُّ P.<sup>9</sup> P. بِرَبِّهِمْ.<sup>10-10</sup> P. بِحَسْبِهِمْ نَفْوَسِهِمْ.

<sup>11</sup> B adds. *وَالَا*. It comes at end of a line. Presumably the scribe was beginning the next word, and found he had not enough room, but he makes no erasure.

<sup>12-12</sup> P. الْلَّدِينِ وَعَيْنِ الْعُلُومِ الْمُلِيَّيِّهِ.<sup>13</sup> P om.<sup>14</sup> P om.



تذكرون<sup>1</sup> أن رتبة الحكمة مشتملة على الأسباب  
والسببيات ورتبة القدرة<sup>2</sup> ظهور<sup>3</sup> الأشياء من غير واسطة  
فقرروا من الشهادة إلى النسب ومن الأسماء إلى المستوي<sup>4</sup>  
ومن الصفات إلى الذات ومن الفناء إلى البقاء  
ويقول على<sup>5</sup> المثل الرابع<sup>6</sup> ألم<sup>7</sup> تر بذل<sup>8</sup> البصيرة أن<sup>9</sup>  
الله<sup>10</sup> أتزل<sup>11</sup> من سماء الأرواح<sup>12</sup> مطر العلوم<sup>13</sup> والمعارف على<sup>14</sup>  
أرض القلوب النقيّة الطاهرة<sup>15</sup> من الميل إلى ما سوى الله<sup>16</sup>  
فتتصبح أرض القلوب<sup>17</sup> مخضرة<sup>18</sup> بأنواع العبادات  
والتجهات والأخلاق الرضيّة مثل الكرم والصفح  
والشفقة والتواضع<sup>19</sup> والإيثار وغير ذلك<sup>20</sup>  
ثم يشرع القوال<sup>21</sup> بذكر كلام عرفاني<sup>22</sup> وقول<sup>23</sup>  
رباني<sup>24</sup> مثل<sup>25</sup>  
لك<sup>26</sup> في القلوب منازل ومقام<sup>27</sup> لا العقل يدر<sup>28</sup> كها ولا الأفهام  
فإن قيل جعلت للحق تعالى<sup>29</sup> منزلا ومقاما<sup>30</sup> وذلك<sup>31</sup>

<sup>1</sup> المس' P. <sup>2</sup> تذكرون B. <sup>3</sup> ظهور B. <sup>4</sup> المقدر P.

<sup>5-6</sup> مثل الثالث B, P adds <sup>7</sup> تزال B. <sup>8</sup> اتزل B. <sup>9-10</sup> P om.

<sup>11</sup> القلب B. <sup>12</sup> ظاهرة B. <sup>13</sup> فتصبح B. <sup>14</sup> القول P.

<sup>15</sup> misplacing from line below. <sup>16</sup> P here takes والشفقة والتواضع.

<sup>17-18</sup> P om. <sup>19</sup> القول P. <sup>20</sup> P om. <sup>21</sup> P L.

<sup>22</sup> P om. <sup>23</sup> ومقامات P.

تجسيم<sup>١</sup> قلنا إنما قيل كذلك<sup>٢</sup> تمسكا<sup>٣</sup> بقول الشارع<sup>٤</sup>  
 الحكيم حين سئل<sup>٥</sup> أين الله في الأرض قال في قلوب<sup>٦</sup>  
 عباده<sup>٧</sup> المؤمنين ومثل<sup>٨</sup>

كل<sup>٩</sup> صبح وكل<sup>١٠</sup> إشراق<sup>١١</sup> تبك<sup>١٢</sup> عيني بدمع مشتاق<sup>١٣</sup>  
 قد لسعت حية الهوى كبدي<sup>١٤</sup> فلا طيب لها ولا راق<sup>١٥</sup>  
 إلا الحبيب الذي شففت به<sup>١٦</sup> فعنده رقتي<sup>١٧</sup> وترافق<sup>١٨</sup>  
 ومثل قوله<sup>١٩</sup>

قم بنا يا سعد نطوي اليد طي<sup>٢٠</sup> في ولا، الحب<sup>٢١</sup> ألقاه إلى<sup>٢٢</sup>  
 لي غرام في هواه عنن<sup>٢٣</sup> لي حكم أحوال الصفا في كل حي<sup>٢٤</sup>  
 رمت حمو الذات إجلالا له<sup>٢٥</sup> ليس وصف جامع إلا إلى<sup>٢٦</sup>  
 قام بي كل<sup>٢٧</sup> المراتب دائما<sup>٢٨</sup> إنها<sup>٢٩</sup> أحكام فتح يا أخي<sup>٣٠</sup>

<sup>١</sup> P. تسميم. <sup>٢</sup> P adds سـ. <sup>٣</sup> عـسـكاـ B. <sup>٤</sup> سـالـ B. <sup>٥</sup> فـلـوبـ B.

<sup>٦</sup> P om. <sup>٧</sup> B. <sup>٨</sup> P adds قوله، مثل B. <sup>٩</sup> اشراقـيـ.

<sup>٩</sup> P. تبـكـيـ, which is gramm. correct, but does not suit metre.

<sup>١٠</sup> P. رـاقـيـ. <sup>١١</sup> B. <sup>١٢</sup> P. رـقـيـ.

<sup>١٣-١٨</sup> B om. At foot of page is written in corner to indicate that it is the first word of the next page, but it is omitted there.

<sup>١٤</sup> I have included this poem because it is given in B, but it can hardly have been part of the original work, as it seems like a copy of the first poem in the *diwān* of Ibn al-Fāriḍ (576-632/1180-81-1234-5), who lived at a later period than the author of this work.

<sup>١٥</sup> B. معـ. <sup>١٦</sup> B. أـخـيـ.

لَا يراني مِنْ لَهْ فِي نَفْسِهِ حَظّ فَهُمْ<sup>١</sup> فِي شَمْسِ الْوَجْدِ فِي  
زَادَنِي حَالُ الْفَنَا فِي حَبَّهِ لَا أَبْلِي النَّشْرَ<sup>٢</sup> أَوْ فِي حَكْمِ طَيِّبِي  
كُلَّ أَوْصَافِ بَدَا فِي حَكْمِهِ ذَاكَ سَرَّ الْجَمْعِ مِنْكُمْ أَوْ إِلَيْيِ<sup>٣</sup>  
يَا أَصْيَحَابِي مَلَأْتُ تَذَكِّرَوْا حَالَتِي بَعْدَ اعْتِرَافٍ لِي فَتَيِّبِي  
أَنْصَبْتُنِي فِي صَفَاءِ رَاحِمِهِ مِثْلُ نَصْبِ الْفَعْلِ نَحْوًا لَامَ كَيِّ<sup>٤</sup>  
جَاءَنِي بِشَرِّي وَصَالَ بِالْبَقَا صَادَ آسَادَ الْوَرَى هَذَا الظَّبَّيِّ<sup>٥</sup>

### ومثل

عِلْمُ الْحَقِيقَةِ عِلْمٌ كَشْفٌ شَامِلٌ لِمَرَاتِبِ الْأَكْوَانِ وَالْأَلْوَانِ  
فَإِذَا فَنِيتَ عَنِ التَّصْوِيرِ فَاهْمَا أَدْرَكْتَ حَكْمَ حَقَّاتِ الرَّحْمَانِ  
لَا عَقْلٌ لِلْحَظَّةِ الْمُحَقَّقِ كُشْرَةٌ مِنْ كَنْهِ وَحْدَةِ ذَاتِهِ الْمَنَانِ  
إِنْ كُنْتَ قَاصِدَ فَتْحَ بَابِ جَامِعٍ حَقَّ حَقَّاتِ كُونٍ كُلَّ مَكَانٍ

<sup>١</sup> B. فَهُمْ.

<sup>٢</sup> B. النَّشْر.

<sup>٣</sup> B. عَلَيِّ. For the explanation of this change, see note on translation.

<sup>٤</sup> B. لَهْدَ.

<sup>٥</sup> B. اهْرَامِي, but it might be read اعْتِرَافٍ with the dots omitted.  
اعْتِرَافٍ is impossible, as it breaks the metre. I have adopted اهْرَامِي as it fits the metre with a very slight change from the MS.

<sup>٦-٧</sup> B. لَا مَرِي. The change is made following l. 21 of Ibn al-Fārid's poem. I am indebted to Professor R. A. Nicholson for this emendation.

<sup>٨</sup> B. هَدَا.

<sup>٩</sup> This poem is also wanting in P.

ثم انسليخ عن رؤية<sup>١</sup> الصور التي منها جوامع صفوه الإيمان  
فإذا رفعت لواه مجد شامخ ومحوت آثار الهوى وهوان  
حققت حينئذ جوامع سره وفهمت وحدة وجهه<sup>٢</sup> المنان

ومثل قوله

كل<sup>٣</sup> الوجود بفيض<sup>٤</sup> جودك<sup>٥</sup> ناطق<sup>٦</sup> وجال وجهك<sup>٧</sup> في البصائر شارق<sup>٨</sup>  
ونهاية المشاق في فلواتهم<sup>٩</sup> بدء<sup>١٠</sup> الحب<sup>١١</sup> ومن حواه حقائق<sup>١٢</sup>  
لتا بدأ<sup>١٣</sup> من حكم سر<sup>١٤</sup> جامع<sup>١٥</sup> رفع الحجاب<sup>١٦</sup> وذاك أمر<sup>١٧</sup> خارق<sup>١٨</sup>  
 جاء التجلي من مقام صفات<sup>١٩</sup>ه ومحى فوائح ليس فيها<sup>٢٠</sup> طارق<sup>٢١</sup>  
أعطى لوائح<sup>٢٢</sup> مكرمات ساطع<sup>٢٣</sup> آب<sup>٢٤</sup> إليه مغارب ومشارق<sup>٢٥</sup>  
هذا الذي أظهرت من<sup>٢٦</sup> كنه<sup>٢٧</sup> الصفا

حق الحقيقة وهو سر فائق

أبكار خدر<sup>٢٨</sup> العشق وقت جلاته<sup>٢٩</sup> شدت على<sup>٣٠</sup> أو ساطهن مناطق<sup>٣١</sup>  
لا تطلب<sup>٣٢</sup> العرفان في آثاره<sup>٣٣</sup> والفتح<sup>٣٤</sup> رفع<sup>٣٥</sup> والفناء<sup>٣٦</sup> موافق<sup>٣٧</sup>  
بل رم<sup>٣٨</sup> كمال<sup>٣٩</sup> المحو في إجلاله<sup>٤٠</sup> ليكون<sup>٤١</sup> قلبك منه فيه دوافق<sup>٤٢</sup>

<sup>١</sup> B. رؤة.

<sup>٢</sup> B. وجهه.

<sup>٣</sup> P. بفضل.

<sup>٤</sup> B. جودك.

<sup>٥</sup> B. وجهك.

<sup>٦</sup> P. بل.

<sup>٧</sup> P. بد.

<sup>٨-٩</sup> P. ذلك من.

<sup>٩</sup> B. فنها.

<sup>١٠</sup> P. لواح.

<sup>١١</sup> P. انت.

<sup>١٢</sup> B. كه.

<sup>١٣</sup> P. حذر.

<sup>١٤</sup> B. مناطق.

<sup>١٥</sup> B. يطلب.

<sup>١٦</sup> P. om.

<sup>١٧-١٧</sup> P. رفعت والفناء.

<sup>١٨</sup> P. om. line.

<sup>١٩</sup> B. ليكون.

فإن وقع من القوال شعر<sup>١</sup> فيه وصف الخد<sup>٢</sup> والخلال  
والقد<sup>٣</sup> حمل على خد<sup>٤</sup> النبي<sup>٥</sup> صلى الله عليه وسلم وحاله  
وقده<sup>٦</sup>

وأمتا آلات الملاهي فكلها<sup>٧</sup> حرام عند الجمهور  
كالجنك والرباب<sup>٨</sup> والعود والبربط والمزمار وما أشبه ذلك  
إلا الدف<sup>٩</sup> فإنه<sup>١٠</sup> ورد في جواز سماع الدف<sup>١١</sup> حديثان  
صحيحان في البخاري<sup>١٢</sup> ومسلم فتبعه صلى الله عليه وسلم  
أصحاب الأذواق<sup>١٣</sup>

وشرط اجتماعهم أن لا يكون بينهم أمرد<sup>١٤</sup> ولا طاقة<sup>١٥</sup>  
ينظر منها<sup>١٦</sup> إليهم<sup>١٧</sup> النسوان<sup>١٨</sup> فإن حضر بينهم من<sup>١٩</sup> المرد  
الصلحاء قعدوا خلف<sup>٢٠</sup> الرجال<sup>٢١</sup> فإذا وجدوا في باطنهم تحرّك<sup>٢٢</sup>  
تحرّك<sup>٢٣</sup> كهم<sup>٢٤</sup> حركة من دعي<sup>٢٥</sup> إلى خدمة<sup>٢٦</sup> ملك<sup>٢٧</sup> كبير القدر  
والأقبال على الله تعالى<sup>٢٨</sup> لا يقوم صاحب وجده<sup>٢٩</sup> إلا بعد  
الغبة فيوافقه<sup>٣٠</sup> القوم ولا يتصنّع بالرقص ولا يتتكلّف بل<sup>٣١</sup>

١-١. القوال الشعرية P.

٢. الصدغ B.

٣. الدف B.

٤. بينها P.

٥. حلف B.

٦. حرمة P.

٧. والرباب P.

٨. الارادات P.

٩. بـ P om.

١٠. نسوان P.

١١. الرجال B.

١٢. بـ P om.

١٣. فكلها B.

١٤. بينهم B.

١٥. بـ P om.

١٦. فحركتهم P.

١٧. ادعون P.

١٨. بـ P om.

١٩. والارادات B.

٢٠. بـ P om.

٢١. بـ P om.

٢٢. بـ P om.

٢٣. بـ P om.

٢٤. بـ P om.

تكون<sup>١</sup> حركاتهم بحكم الحال كمغلوب من قلق<sup>٢</sup> أو  
 اضطراب<sup>٣</sup> ضروري<sup>٤</sup> فإذا أخذت أرواحهم حظاً من  
 الأحوال الفيبيّة ورقت قلوبهم من الأنوار الذاتيّة  
 وتكتنّت<sup>٥</sup> في الصفاء والأنوار الروحانيّة قعدوا والمزمزم  
 يزمزم<sup>٦</sup> زمرة خفيفة<sup>٧</sup> لإخراجهم<sup>٨</sup> بالتدريج<sup>٩</sup> من الباطن  
 إلى الظاهر<sup>٩</sup> فإذا سكت<sup>٩</sup> قرأ<sup>١٠</sup> غير القارئ<sup>١١</sup> الأول  
 مثل<sup>١١</sup> هذا عطاوئنا فامنن<sup>١٢</sup> أو أمسك<sup>١٣</sup> بغير حساب إلى  
 قوله تعالى<sup>١٤</sup> أولي<sup>١٥</sup> الألباب<sup>١٦</sup> أو إن<sup>١٧</sup> الذين<sup>١٨</sup> قالوا ربنا  
 الله ثم استقاموا إلى قوله تعالى<sup>١٩</sup> ذو حظ<sup>٢٠</sup> عظيم وما  
 أشبه ذلك<sup>٢١</sup> فإن<sup>٢٢</sup> كان<sup>٢٣</sup> فيهم<sup>٢٤</sup> من بقيّة حال<sup>٢٥</sup>  
 أو استغراق ثني<sup>٢٦</sup> القوال<sup>٢٧</sup> في<sup>٢٨</sup> نحر أخف<sup>٢٩</sup> من الأول  
 فإن<sup>٢٩</sup> قعدوا<sup>٣٠</sup> ثلث<sup>٣١</sup> في<sup>٣٢</sup> نحر<sup>٣٣</sup> وسط بين<sup>٣٤</sup> الشقيل  
 والخفيف<sup>٣٥</sup> إذ<sup>٣٦</sup> المراتب الكلية<sup>٣٧</sup> ثلاثة<sup>٣٨</sup> رتبة<sup>٣٩</sup> الإنسان

١. تكون P.	٢-٣. واصطرب P.	٤. حظاً B.
٥. تكتنّت P.	٤. حقيقة P.	٥. ضروري B.
٩-١٠ P om.	٥. حقيقة، حقيقة B.	٦. بالتدريج P.
١٣ P.	٦. الألباب P.	٧. لاخفايهم P.
١٧ B om.	٧. وان ١٤-١٥ P.	٨. الدين B.
٢١ B.	٨-٩ P om.	٩. الدين P.
٢٩ من.	٩-١٠ بحر العطف واحف P.	١٠. بين P.
٣٤ ثبت.	١١-١٢ بحر P.	١١. قدروا P.
٣٩ الحفف.	١٢-١٣ من P.	١٢. القيل B.
	١٣-١٤ اذا B.	

ورتبة الملك ورتبة الربوبيّة <sup>١</sup> وعندها السكون المطلق ثم <sup>٢</sup>  
 يقونون من محل السَّماع إلى منازلهم <sup>٣</sup> ويقعدون <sup>٤</sup>  
 مُرَاقِبِينَ <sup>٥</sup> لِكَشْفِ ما لَاحَ لَهُمْ <sup>٦</sup> حَالَةً اسْتَفْرَاقِهِمْ فِي  
 الْوَجْدِ <sup>٧</sup> فَنَهُمْ مِنْ يَسْتَغْنِي أَيْتَامًا بَعْدَ السَّماعِ <sup>٨</sup> عَنِ الْفَدَاءِ بِمَا  
 تَغْدِيَتْ <sup>٩</sup> أَرْوَاحَهُمْ وَقُلُوبَهُمْ <sup>١٠</sup> بِالْوَارِدَاتِ <sup>١١</sup> الْفَيْيَةُ هَذَا  
 طَرِيقُ <sup>١٢</sup> الْقَوْمِ وَلَا يَنْكُرُ لِمَشْلَهُ هَذِهِ الْأَحْوَالَ مِنْ لَهُ أَدْنَى  
 حَظًّا <sup>١٣</sup> مِنَ الدِّينِ وَالنُّورِ

وَلَمَّا تَأْخَرَ الزَّمَانَ <sup>١٤</sup> سَامَحُوا نَظَرُ النَّسْوَانِ الْصَّالِحَاءِ <sup>١٥</sup>  
 الَّلَّا تِي مِنْهُمْ مِنَ الطَّاقَاتِ وَغَيْرِ ذَلِكَ وَاجْتِمَاعُهُمْ  
 بِالْمَرْدِ الْصَّالِحِ <sup>١٦</sup> دُونَ غَيْرِهِمْ وَلَمْ يَزُلْ كَذَلِكَ إِلَى أَنْ تَشَبَّهَ  
 بِهِمُ الْعَوَامُ وَاخْتَلَطَ <sup>١٧</sup> الصَّالِحُ بِالظَّالِمِ <sup>١٨</sup> فَاخْتَلَّ النَّظَامُ  
 فَيَنْتَذِي يَحْبُبُ عَلَى كُلِّ أَحَدٍ الْأَخْذَ بِحَالِهِ وَمَالِهِ وَيَتَرَكُ  
 الْغَيْرَ كَمْ سَكَنَ بَيْنَ <sup>١٩</sup> الْمَرْضَى فَعَلَيْهِ الْاِشْتِغَالُ بِنَفْسِهِ  
 فَقَطْ وَهَكُذا كَانَ الدِّينُ <sup>٢٠</sup> فِي أَوَّلِ الزَّمَانِ غَصَّاً طَرِيَّاً

<sup>١</sup> الربوبيّة B.

<sup>٣</sup> ويقصدون P.

<sup>٤</sup> بـ <sup>٥</sup> منازلهم P. om. مُرَاقِبِينَ P.

<sup>٦</sup> ما لَاحَ لَهُمْ P.

<sup>٧</sup> الْوَجْدِ B.

<sup>٨</sup> افْشَا الكَشْفَ P.

<sup>٩</sup> وَقُلُوبَهُمْ B.

<sup>٩</sup> الْوَارِدَاتِ B.

<sup>١٢-١٣</sup> ساوا فَعْلَمَ P.

<sup>١٣</sup> الظَّالِمِ P.

<sup>١٤-١٥</sup> طَرِيَّاً B.

<sup>١٤</sup> الظَّالِمِ P.

<sup>١٦</sup> الْمَرْضَى P.

<sup>١٦</sup> بَيْنَ P.

<sup>١٧</sup> الْأَخْذَ B.

<sup>١٧</sup> بِحَالِهِ P.

<sup>١٨</sup> مَالِهِ P.

<sup>١٨</sup> وَمَالِهِ P.

<sup>١٩</sup> الْأَخْذَ B.

<sup>١٩</sup> بِحَالِهِ P.

<sup>٢٠</sup> طَرِيَّاً B.

<sup>٢٠</sup> بِحَالِهِ P.

متيناً غير مشوبٌ بشيءٍ من الاعتقادات الفاسدة  
والآراءُ المضلةُ فكلماً تأخرَ الزمان فسدت الاعتقادات  
وكثُرت الأعمالُ المضلةُ كما أخبرَ الشارعُ عن ذلك  
بقوله ستفترقُ أمتى على ثلاثٍ وسبعين فرقة الناجية  
واحدةٌ والباقي هلكٌ قيلُ يا رسولَ الله ومن <sup>١٠</sup> الفرقة  
الناجية قال ما أنا عليه وأصحابي

فوجب الآن على كلّ صاحب تقوى أن يلتزم <sup>12</sup> بما <sup>11</sup> هو الحقّ ويترك الباطل فكذلك السماع المستحبّ  
بين الأولياء ما <sup>13</sup> ذكرنا عند اختلاط الصالح بالطالع وجب  
على كلّ صاحب ذوق ووجد <sup>14</sup> أن يلتزم بالسماع بشروطه  
الممكنة ولا ينزعز عنده بقول منكر ومعاند فإنّ ذلك  
يوجب ترك التشبيه <sup>15</sup> بالأولياء وحينئذ يخرج عن حكم  
قوله عليه السلام من تشبيهه بقوم فهو منهم <sup>16</sup>  
وأمتا الفقراء المنتسبون <sup>18</sup> إلى هذه الطائفة وليسوا

1 P. L.

2 P. *Scammon*

الإدارات <sup>٣</sup> P

٤ بـ ﻢـ

8 P

٦٣

7 P. ፳፻፲፻

• P. 15.

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

١٠ P adds

11 P. 1c.

12 B - 11

13 P

۱۴ پ

15 P. 4 511

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

17 P. 14

روجب

منهم خالهم بالنسبة إلى الأولياء المتقدمين <sup>حال فهم</sup><sup>1</sup>  
 الزمان بالنسبة إلى الفقهاء المتقدمين أصحاب الورع  
<sup>والقوى</sup><sup>2</sup> وذلك لأن قاعدة الفقه تقتضي <sup>3</sup>الزهد والورع  
<sup>والقوى</sup> والقناعة باليسير من الدنيا وعدم طلب  
<sup>الفضلات</sup><sup>4</sup> وعدم السعي <sup>5</sup>إلى أبواب الملوك إلا لقضاء  
 حاجتهم والمداومة على ما كان عليه النبي <sup>صلى الله</sup>  
 عليه وسلم <sup>وكان من دأبه</sup><sup>6</sup> صلى الله عليه وسلم أجوع  
 يوما وأشبع يوما وقللت هائشة رضي الله عنها ما شبع  
 رسول الله <sup>صلى الله</sup><sup>8</sup> عليه وسلم <sup>منذ</sup><sup>8</sup> قدم المدينة  
<sup>خبر</sup><sup>9</sup> برفع قدرته <sup>صلى الله</sup><sup>11</sup> عليه وسلم على <sup>صلى الله</sup><sup>10</sup>  
 إضعاف التلذذات مع مسامحة الحق <sup>تعالى</sup><sup>13</sup> بذلك حيث  
 قال <sup>تعالى</sup><sup>15</sup> يأيها <sup>17</sup> الرسل كلوا من الطيبات واعملوا  
 صالحا و عدم <sup>21</sup> بناء ما <sup>20</sup> لا يحتاج <sup>19</sup> إليه <sup>18</sup> لما <sup>18</sup> ورد في الخبر

<sup>1</sup> B . والقوى.

<sup>2</sup> B . الفضلات.

<sup>3</sup> B . خير.

<sup>4</sup> B . ما كان مسامحا بحق الله.

<sup>5</sup> B . يأيها.

<sup>6</sup> B . محتاج.

<sup>7</sup> P . حالهم.

<sup>8</sup> P . السلوك.

<sup>9</sup> P . برم.

<sup>10</sup> P . 11-11 P repeats.

<sup>11</sup> P . يا إياها.

<sup>12</sup> P . إليها.

<sup>13</sup> P . تقتضي.

<sup>14</sup> P . السلوك.

<sup>15</sup> P . يأيها.

<sup>16</sup> P . 14-14 P adds.

<sup>17</sup> P . يا إياها.

<sup>18</sup> P . إليها.

<sup>18</sup> P . مطلب.

<sup>19</sup> P . om.

<sup>20</sup> P . اصناف.

<sup>21</sup> P . الله.

<sup>22</sup> P . منا.

<sup>23</sup> P . om.

من بنيٌ فوق ما يحتاجٌ إليه كلفه اللهُ أَن يحملهٌ علىٌ  
كاملهٌ والمواظبةٌ علىٌ التواضعٌ وهكذا كان علماء السلف  
الصالحُ

تقل عن أبي حنيفة رحمه الله أنه لما عرض عليه  
ال الخليفة القضاة فأبى عن ذلك تمسكا بقوله عليه السلام  
من جعل قاضيا فقد ذبح بغير سكين وبقوله عليه  
السلام القضاة ثلاثة قاضيان في النار وقاض في الجنة  
وهذا من ورءه ودينه وتمسكا بالحديث فلما حضر  
" بين يدي " الخليفة وعرض عليه القضاة فأبى فمرى  
وصرب حتى ظهر أثر الضرب على ظهره وسأله منه  
الدم فشاور أصحابه فقالوا ما رأيتك المصلحة فهو الحق وقال  
أبو يوسف لا بأس بذلك فإن فيه نفع الناس فقال  
كأنني مبكت قاضيا ثم دخل المنصور على أبي حنيفة  
وعزاءٌ<sup>١٠</sup> فيما فعل وقال هذا فقيه العراق ثم استدعاه

والمواظبة B<sup>١</sup> . يحمله B<sup>٤</sup> . تعالى B<sup>٣</sup> . يحتاج B<sup>٢</sup> . يبني<sup>٥</sup> B  
رضي الله عنهم اجمعين :  
٦ P om. Thereafter P finishes as follows :  
ورضي عنا بهم وصلى الله على سيدنا محمد اشرف المسلمين وخاتم النبفين  
[P النبفين] والحمد لله رب العالمين ورضي عن آله وصحبه الطيبين  
الطاهرين وأزواجه وذراته وأتباعه إلى يوم الدين والحمد لله رب العالمين  
عزره B<sup>٩</sup> . الخليفة B<sup>٨</sup> . طهره B<sup>٦</sup> . بن ندي B<sup>٧</sup>.

وأمر له بدل كل جلدة بـ<sup>١</sup> ألف درهم فقيل إنه ضرب  
خمسين سوطا ثم عرض عليه القضاة فقال لا أصلح له  
ثم عاد عليه فقال لا يخلو<sup>٢</sup> الأمر من أنني صادق أم  
كاذب فإن كنت صادقاً فلا يجوز لك تولية من ليس  
بصالح له وإن كنت كاذباً فلا يجوز لك تولية الكاذب  
وهكذا نقل عن أبي الليث السمرقندى أنه كان  
ورعا محافظاً على الدين حتى قال منذ كذا سنة لم  
يكتب على<sup>٣</sup> صاحب الشمال شيئاً بالنسبة أى علمه  
بمحافظته على الدين وقد صحبه بعض الطلاب خدمة  
وتعلمه مدة ولم يسمع منه كلاماً واحداً من الغيبة فإن  
شرع أحد عنده في الغيبة أطرق رأسه إعراضاً عنه  
ولا يواجهه<sup>٤</sup> بالمنع لـ<sup>٥</sup> لا يتآذى خاطره<sup>٦</sup> وقلبه وإن كان  
بـ<sup>٧</sup> الحق

وكذلك الإمام جمال<sup>٨</sup> الدين المحبونى في بخارا<sup>٩</sup>  
وكان فقيها زاهداً متورعاً له وظائف<sup>١٠</sup> في العبادات

الف<sup>١</sup> B.عليه<sup>٢</sup> B.القصاص<sup>٣</sup> B.يخلوا<sup>٤</sup> B.صادقاً<sup>٥</sup> B.محوز<sup>٦</sup> B.يواجهه<sup>٧</sup> B.خاطره<sup>٨</sup> B.جمال<sup>٩</sup> B.بخارا<sup>١٠</sup> B.وطائف<sup>١١</sup> B.

البدنية والاشتغال بالعلم والتعلّم لم يستغل بأحد قط  
إذا قيل له فلان سيّى العمل قال قال صلّى الله عليه  
وسلم من حسن إسلام المرأة تركه ما لا يعنيه وقال عليه  
السلام ابدأ بنفسك ثمّ من تعلّم فن كانت نفسه  
ناقصة فلا يجوز له الاشتغال بغيره<sup>١</sup>

هكذا كان دأب الفقهاء المتقدّمين وفقهاء هذا  
الزمان بخلاف ذلك فيهم الحرص والطمع والتردد إلى  
أبواب الملوك والتكلّم في أعراض الناس ومداومة الغيبة  
قال عليه السلام الغيبة أشدّ من الزنا<sup>٢</sup> وقال عليه السلام  
الغيبة أن تذكر أخاك بما يكره فقال رجل يرسّول الله  
إن كان في أخي ما أقوله قال صلّى الله عليه وسلم إن  
كان في أخيك ما تقول فقد اغتبته وإن لم يكن فقد  
بهته<sup>٣</sup> وقال صلّى الله عليه وسلم لا تحسدوا ولا تبغضوا  
ولا تدابروا وكونوا عباد الله إخوانا كلّ المسلم على كلّ  
المسلم حرام عرضه ودمه وما له وتحاسدهم وتبغضهم بعضهم  
بعضًا ومداومة الغيبة والتكلّم<sup>٤</sup> في أعراض بعضهم بعضًا

اعتبته B<sup>٥</sup> .رسول B<sup>٦</sup> .الزنا B<sup>٧</sup> .عا B<sup>٨</sup> .يجوز B<sup>٩</sup>  
بعضًا B<sup>١٠</sup> .والكلم B<sup>١١</sup> .بهته B<sup>١٢</sup>

وعدم الحرص على تعلم الشيء حقيقة بل قناع كلّ بقول  
 غيره وليس له حرص على تعلم الشيء حقيقة حقيقة  
 المسألة وأصلها وكيفية استنباطها وتحقق النصوص الدالة  
 عليها والجواب عن المعارضات الواردة عليها وعدم احترام  
 العلماء والصلحاء، فظهر <sup>١</sup> بالأمور <sup>٢</sup> الواقعة أنّ أفعال فقهاء  
 الوقت وأمورهم وتفقّههم <sup>٣</sup> بالنسبة إلى الفقهاء الماضين في  
 تورّعهم واجتهدتهم ودينهم <sup>٤</sup> كحال قراء الوقت بالنسبة إلى  
 الأولياء الماضين فإن لاموا القراء في عدم جواز <sup>٥</sup> سماعهم  
 فإنّهم ليسوا على شروط الأولياء الماضين <sup>٦</sup> يأثّي لهم اللوم  
 عليهم في عدم [تأثير] <sup>٧</sup> ما كان عليه الفقهاء <sup>٨</sup> الماضين  
 المتورّعين فإن لاموا الغير وأتوا بخلاف ما يحب عليهم  
 توجّه <sup>٩</sup> في حقّهم لم تقولون ما لا تفعلون <sup>١٠</sup> كبر مقتا عند الله  
 أن تقولوا ما لا تفعلون [قوله] <sup>١١</sup> تعالى أتأمر ون الناس  
 بالبر <sup>١٢</sup> وتنسون أنفسكم

<sup>١</sup> B. <sup>٢</sup> B. <sup>٣</sup> B. <sup>٤</sup> B. <sup>٥</sup> B. <sup>٦</sup> B. <sup>٧</sup> B. <sup>٨</sup> B. <sup>٩</sup> B. <sup>١٠</sup> B. <sup>١١</sup> B.

<sup>٦</sup> B. <sup>٧</sup> B. <sup>٨</sup> B. <sup>٩</sup> B. <sup>١٠</sup> B. <sup>١١</sup> B.

<sup>7</sup> This word is very faint. All that appears looks like نَأْوَه.

<sup>8</sup> B. <sup>9</sup> B. <sup>10</sup> B. <sup>11</sup> B.

<sup>10</sup> The MS. is badly marked at this point. All that appears of this word is لَه. <sup>11</sup> B.

ونختم الكتاب<sup>١</sup> بحمد الله وحسن توفيقه بحديث  
 بلغنا عن رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم أنه قال إذا  
 أمر تكم بشيء فأتوا منه ما استطعتم والله أعلم  
 تم الكتاب بحمد الله الذي به تتم الصالحات  
 وتنزل البركات وبشريته كل السعادات ومن عنده  
 مقادير الموت والحياة والحمد لله وحده وصلى الله على  
 سيدنا محمد وعلى آله وصحبه وسلم<sup>٣</sup>

<sup>١</sup> الكتاب.

<sup>٢</sup> بحمد.

<sup>٣</sup> وعل.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY OF BOOKS CONSULTED

‘Abd al-Ghanī al-Nābulusī, *Īdāh al-dalālāt fī samā‘ al-ālāt*. Beyrouth, n.d.  
Abdool Mujeed (Hukeem Moulvee), *The Hidayah with its Commentary called the Kifayah*. 4 vols. Calcutta, 1831-4.

Abū Dāwud, *Sunan*. 2 vols. Cairo, 1348/1930.

Abū'l-Faraj al-Isbahānī, *Kiṭāb al-aqdānī*. 20 vols. Būlāq, A.H. 1285.

Abū Naṣr 'Abdallāh b. 'Alī Al-Sarrāj Al-Ṭūsī, *Kitāb al-luma‘ fi 'l-taṣawwuf* (Ed. R. A. Nicholson). Gibb Memorial Series, 1914.

Abū Ṭalīb al-Makki, *Qūt al-qulūb*. 4 parts. Cairo, 1932.

W. Ahlwardt, *Verzeichniss der arab. Handschr. der Königlichen Bibliothek zu Berlin*. 10 vols. Berlin, 1887-99.

Ahmad ibn Ḥanbal, *Musnād*. 6 vols. Cairo, A.H. 1313.

A. J. Arberry, *The Doctrine of the Sūfis*. Trans. of Al-Kalābādī's *Kitāb al-ta‘arruf*. Cambridge, 1935.

‘Attār (Farīd ud-Dīn), *Tadhkira al-awliyā'* (Ed. R. A. Nicholson). 2 vols. London-Leiden, 1905-7.

Al-Baīḍāwī, *Anwār al-tanzīl wa-asmār al-ta‘wīl* (Ed. H. O. Fleischer). 2 vols. Leipzig, 1846-8.

C. Brockelmann, *Geschichte der arabischen Litteratur*. 2 vols. Leipzig, 1898-1902. *Supplement* (in progress).

Al-Bukhārī, *Ṣaḥīḥ*. 4 vols. Cairo, A.H. 1318.

*Catalogue of the Arabic Books in the Khedivial Library at Cairo*. 7 parts. Cairo, 1888-93.

De Slane, *Bibliothèque Nationale*; *Catalogue des manuscrits arabes*. Paris, 1883-95.

R. Dozy, *Supplément aux dictionnaires arabes*. 2 vols. Leiden, 1881.  
*Encyclopædia of Islām*. Leiden, 1913 (in progress).

E. Fagnan, *Additions aux dictionnaires arabes*. Algiers, 1923.

H. G. Farmer, *A History of Arabian Music to the Thirteenth Century*. London, 1929.

— *Studies in Oriental Musical Instruments*. London, 1931.

Al-Ghazālī, *Iḥyā‘ ulūm al-dīn*. Cairo, 1326.

— *Emotional Religion in Islām as Affected by Music and Singing*. Trans. of a book of the *Iḥyā‘* by D. B. Macdonald., *JRAS.*, 1901-2.

I. Goldziher, *Muhammedanische Studien*. 2 vols. Halle a.S., 1888-90.

Hājjī Khalīfa, *Lexicon bibliographicum et encyclopaedicum*. Vols. 1-2, Leipzig, 1835-7; 3-7, London, 1842-58.

C. Hamilton, *The Hedāya or Guide*. Trans. into English. 4 vols. London, 1791.

T. P. Hughes, *A Dictionary of Islām*. London, 1885.

Al-Hujwīrī, *Kashf al-mahjūb*. Trans. by R. A. Nicholson. Gibb Memorial Series. London, 1911.

Ibn ‘Abd Rabbīhī, *Al-‘iqd al-farīd*. 4 vols. Cairo, 1928.

Ibn al-‘Arabī, *Al-futūhāt al-makkiya*. 4 vols. Būlāq, 1971.

— *Muḥādarāt al-abrār wa-muāamarāt al-akhyār*. Cairo, 1324.

Ibn al-‘Aṭṭīr, *Al-kāmil fī l-ta‘rīkh*. 12 vols. Būlāq, 1303.

Ibn Baṭṭūṭa, *Voyages*. Ed. with trans. by C. Defrémy and B. R. San-guinetti. 4 vols. Paris, 1853-8.

Ibn al-Fāriḍ, *Dīwān*. Marseilles, 1853.

Ibn Khallikān, *Wafayāt al-ā'yān*. 3 vols. Cairo, 1299.

— Ibn Khallikān's biographical Dictionary. Trans. by the Baron MacGuckin de Slane. 4 vols. Paris, 1843-71.

Ibn Mājā, *Sunan*. 2 vols. Cairo, 1313.

Ibn al-Nadīm, *Al-Fihrist*. Cairo, 1348/1929.

Ibn Qutaibā, *Handbuch der Geschichte*. Ed. F. Wüstenfeld. Göttingen, 1850.

— *Al-maisir wa'l-qidāb*. Ed. Muhibb al-Dīn al-Khaṭīb. Cairo, 1343.

Ibn Sa'd, *Kitāb al-ṣabaqāt al-kabīr*. Ed. Sachau. 9 vols. (15 parts). Leiden, A.H. 1322-47.

Ibn al-Tiqṭaqā, *Al-Fakhrī*. Cairo, 1345/1927.

Al-Ibshī, *Al-muṣṭaṭraf*. Cairo, 1292.

Al-Jāhīz, *Kitāb al-hayawān*. 3 vols. (7 parts). Cairo, 1323-4.

Jamāl al-Dīn al-Khaṣrājī, *Lisān al-'arab*. 20 vols. Būlāq, 1300-7.

*Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, 1933, pp. 867 ff.; 1935, pp. 339 ff.

Al-Kalābādī, *Kitāb al-ta'arruf*. (Ed. by A. J. Arberry.) Cairo, 1933.

E. W. Lane, *An Arabic-English Lexicon*. 8 vols. (last three ed. by S. Lane-Poole). London, 1863-93.

— *Modern Egyptians*. 2nd ed. London, 1890.

J. W. Macmeeken, *History of the Scottish Metrical Psalms*. Glasgow, 1872.

Mālik, *Al-Muwaṭṭa'*. Cairo, 1280.

L. Massignon, *La Passion d'al-Hallaj*. Paris, 1922.

Al-Mas'ūdī, *Muřūj al-dhahab*. Text and trans. by C. Barbier de Meynard and Pavet de Courteille. 9 vols. Paris, 1861-77.

Muhammad Murtadā, *Tāj al-'arūs*. 10 vols. Cairo, 1306-7.

Sir Wm. Muir, *The Life of Mohammad*. (Ed. T. H. Weir.) Edinburgh, 1912.

Muslim, *Ša'bīh* (with commentary of Al-Nawawī). 5 vols. Cairo, 1283.

Al-Nasā'ī, *Sunan*. 8 vols. Cairo, 1348.

Al-Nawawī, *Tahdhīb al-asmā'*. (Ed. F. Wüstenfeld.) Göttingen, 1842-7.

— "Le Taqrib de An-Nawawī, traduit et annoté par M. Marçais," *Journal Asiatique*, série ix, vols. 16-18.

— *Minhaj et-Talibin*. Trans. from French of L. W. C. Van Den Berg by E. C. Howard. London, 1914.

R. A. Nicholson, *The Mystics of Islam*. London, 1914.

— *Studies in Islamic Mysticism*. Cambridge, 1921.

Al-Niffārī, *The Mawāqif and Mukhāṭabāt*. (Ed. with trans. by A. J. Arberry.) Gibb Memorial Series, 1935.

Al-Nisābūrī, Muhammad ibn 'Abdallāh, *Al-Madkhal fi uṣūl al-hadīth*. Cairo, 1351/1932.

T. Nöldeke, *Delectus veterum carminum arabicorum*. Berlin, 1890.

Al-Nuwairī, *Nihāyat al-arab*. 5 vols. Cairo, 1923-5.

A. Querry, *Droit Musulman*. 2 vols. Paris, 1871-2.

Al-Qushairī, *Al-riḍāla al-quṣhāriyya fi 'ilm al-taṣawwuf*. Cairo, 1318.

J. E. Sarkis, *Dictionnaire encyclopédique de bibliographie arabe*. Cairo, 1928-30.

Margaret Smith, *Studies in Early Mysticism in the Near and Middle East*. London, 1931.

Al-Ṭabarī, *Annales*. (Ed. M. De Goeje.) 15 vols. Lugd. Bat., 1879–1901.

Al-Ṭayālī, *Muṣnād*. Haidarābād, Deccan, 1321.

Al-Tirmidhī, *Al-jāmi' al-ṣahīh*. 2 vols. Būlāq, 1292.

E. Underhill, *The Essentials of Mysticism and Other Essays*. London, 1920.

A. J. Wensinck, *A Handbook of Early Muhammadan Tradition*. Leiden, 1927.

— *Concordance et indices de la tradition musulmane*. Leiden, 1933 (in progress).

A. Wiener, "Die Farāğ ba'd aš-Šidda Litteratur," in *Der Islam*, vol. iv (1913).

W. Wright, *A Grammar of the Arabic Language*. 3rd edn. 2 vols. London, 1896–8.

Yāqūt, *Dictionary of Learned Men*. (Ed. Margoliouth.) Gibb Memorial Series, 1907–27.

*Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft*, vol. 48 (1894).



# INDEX

## 1. CITATIONS FROM THE QUR'ĀN.

SŪRA	PAGE	SŪRA	PAGE
ii, 5	79	xxiii, 1-3	1
36	30	53	114
41	118	xxiv, 2	95
59	30	33	76
154	81	xxv, 40	39
218	11	72	1
266	21	xxvi, 128	37
iii, 29	78 f.	xxviii, 55	1
184	81	xxx, 14	1
iv, 42	21	xxxi, 5	1, 24, 91
v, 3	76	18	2
65	20	xxxii, 16	15
81	83	xxxiii, 21	77
86 f.	104	37	84
92 f.	11	40	82
vi, 52	98	xxxv, 1	1
71	76	xxxviii, 38 ff.	112
vii, 171	69, 99	72 ff.	99
viii, 16	97	xxxix, 19	1, 83
23	75	62 ff.	105
24	76	xli, 30 ff.	112
35	91	xlix, 10	74
ix, 85 f.	80	l, 12	39
99	20	16	116
120	74	li, 15 ff.	105
xiii, 8	82	41	20
xv, 29	99	47 ff.	105
xvi, 46	85	liii, 59 ff.	1
117	93	61	24
xvii, 66	1, 31	lix, 7	77
xviii, 27	98	lxii, 2 f.	118
59 ff.	5	lxx, 24 f.	28
sūra	98	lxxxii, 11	116
xxi, 53	34	cxi, sūra	79
104	27	cxiv, 4	73
xxii, 62	105		

## 2. NAMES OF PERSONS AND PLACES.

'Abdallāh ibn 'Abbās, 1, 24, 31, 34, 36, 38.  
 'Abdallāh ibn Ja'far, 85 f.  
 'Abdallāh ibn Khafif, 97.  
 'Abdallāh ibn Nāfi', 33.  
 'Abdallāh ibn Salūl, 79 f.  
 'Abdallāh ibn 'Umar, 25, 29 f., 33, 35.  
 'Abd al-Rahmān ibn 'Umar, 15.  
 Abū 'Ali al-Daqqāq, 6 f.  
 Abū Bakr, 22, 25, 78 f.  
 Abū'l Bayān, 87.  
 Abū Burda, 35.  
 Abū Dāwud, 29 f., 32 f., 35, 37 f., 40, 59, 75, 82, 89, 91-4, 96, 113, 115, 117, 150.  
 Abū Hanifa, 2, 25, 87-90, 95, 115 f.  
 Abū'l-Hārith Bunānī, 5.  
 Abū Huraira, 21, 23, 36 f.  
 Abū Ja'far, 34.  
 Abū Jahl, 79.  
 Abū Lahab, 79, 86.  
 Abū'l-Laith al-Samarqandī, 116.  
 Abū Mūsā al-Ash'arī, 32.  
 Abū Naṣr al-Sarrāj, 2, 6 f., 10, 94, 103 f.  
 Abū Sa'īd ibn abi'l-Khair, 9, 97.  
 Abū Sa'īd al-Isṭakhrī, 77.  
 Abū Sulaimān al-Dārānī, 5.  
 Abū Tālib al-Makki, 5 f., 8, 10, 85.  
 Abū Umāma, 2, 19, 23, 25, 30.  
 Abū 'Uthmān al-Hirī, 7.  
 Abū Yūsuf, 115.  
 Abyssinians, 80, 93.  
 'Ād, 20.  
 Aden, 13.  
 Ahmad ibn Hanbal, 75, 78-81, 84, 88 f., 92, 94, 113, 117, 139.  
 Ahmad al-Rifā'i, 9.  
 Ā'iša, 2, 20, 23 f., 35, 77-9, 81, 114.  
 Aiyūb ibn abi Tamīm, 35.  
 Ajnadaīn, 40.  
 'Alī ibn abi Tālib, 20, 31, 34, 84 f.  
 'Alī ibn al-Husain (Zain al-'Ābidin), 27.  
 'Āmir ibn abi Mūsā, 36.  
 'Amr ibn al-'Āṣ, 85 f.  
 'Amr ibn Dīnār, 36.  
 Anas ibn Mālik, 30, 36.  
 Al-Ashqānī, 5.  
 'Āṣim ibn Hubaira, 32.  
 'Atā' ibn abi Rabāh, 36, 85.  
 'Attār, 97.  
 Aus (Arab tribe), 78, 98.  
 Badr, 75, 79, 98.  
 Baḡhdād, 63, 115.  
 Al-Baidāwī, 24, 116.  
 Barqa Sūhmud, 75.  
 Al-Baṣra, 32, 36.  
 Bu'āth, 78.  
 Buḥārā, 116.  
 Al-Buḥārī, 2 f., 19, 22, 24, 29, 32, 40, 75, 78, 81 f., 84, 87 f., 93 f., 111, 113, 117, 128, 143.  
 Buraida, 32 f.  
 Christians, 83.  
 Dhū'l-Nūn, 8.  
 Egypt, 31, 85.  
 Al-Faḍl ibn al-Rabī', 35.  
 Al-Fuqail ibn 'Iyād, 27.  
 Al-Ghazālī, 2, 4-8, 10, 23 f., 27, 29 f., 63 f., 82-4, 111.  
 Habib al-Zaiyāt, 17.  
 Hājjī Khalifa, 14, 63.  
 Al-Hallāj, 9.  
 Hamdān (Arab tribe), 36.  
 Hāni' ibn 'Amr, 35.  
 Hāritha ibn Badr, 85.  
 Hārūn al-Rashīd, 5.  
 Al-Hasan al-Baṣrī, 12, 28, 32, 36.  
 Al-Hasan ibn 'Alī, 15.  
 Al-Hijāz, 85.  
 Hishām ibn 'Abd al-Malik, 36.  
 Hūbartha ibn Asmā', 39.  
 Hūdhaifa ibn al-Yamān, 29.  
 Al-Hujwīrī, 4-10.  
 Al-Huṣrī, 104.  
 Ibn abi'l-Dunyā, 2, 11-17, 19, 33, 64, 68, 92.  
 Ibn al-'Arabī, 15, 84.  
 Ibn al-Āthīr, 14.  
 Ibn Battūṭa, 9.  
 Ibn al-Fārid, 9, 108-110, 172 f.  
 Ibn Juraij, 25.  
 Ibn Khairān, 77.  
 Ibn Khallikān, 14, 23, 25, 29-31, 36 f., 39, 63, 77, 115 f.  
 Ibn Mājā, 15, 19 f., 26, 28-33, 37 f., 59, 75, 78, 94, 96, 114, 117 f., 131, 152.  
 Ibn Mas'ūd, 24-6, 32.  
 Ibn al-Musaiyib, 37.

Ibn Qutaiba, 12, 34, 36.  
 Ibn Sa'd, 19, 23, 25, 29, 31-4, 36 f., 39, 98.  
 Ibn Sirin, 36 f.  
 Ibn Suraij, 77.  
 Ibn Taimiya, 17.  
 Ibrāhīm ibn Adham, 32, 34, 37 f.  
 Ibrāhīm al-Mauṣilī, 5.  
 Al-Ibshīhi, 36.  
 'Ikrima, 40.  
 Al-'Irāq, 115.  
 Ishāq ibn Ibrāhīm Al-Mauṣilī, 35.

Ja'far ibn abi Tālib, 84 f.  
 Al-Jāhiẓ, 12, 36-8.  
 Jamāl al-Dīn al-Mahbūnī, 116.  
 Al-Janad, 36.  
 Jerusalem, 39.  
 Jili, 109.  
 Jubair ibn Nufair, 22.  
 Al-Junaid, 6, 8 f., 11, 72, 93, 97.

Ka'b ibn Zuhair, 92.  
 Al-Kalābādhī, 7-9, 69, 100, 103.  
 Al-Khadir, 5.  
 Khālid ibn al-Walid, 22.  
 Al-Khalil ibn Ahmad, 35.  
 Khazraj (Arab tribe), 78, 80.  
 Khurāsān, 27, 32.  
 Kināna (Arab tribe), 39.  
 Al-Kūfa, 36 f.

Lot, 38, 40.

Madā'in, 29.  
 Al-Madīna, 25, 31-3, 37, 39, 77 f., 80, 98, 114.  
 Majd al-Dīn, 7, 63-5, 88, 97, 108, 113.  
 Makka, 27, 31 f., 36, 39, 79, 85.  
 Mālik ibn Anas, 2, 25, 30, 33 f., 77, 89, 96.  
 Mālik ibn Dīnār, 23.  
 Al-Mansūr, 3, 115 f.  
 Ma'rūf al-Karkhī, 97.  
 Marw, 32.  
 Marwān (last Umayyad Caliph), 34, 115.  
 Al-Mas'ūdi, 14.  
 Al-Māwardī, 85.  
 Mimshād al-Dīnawarī, 3, 8.  
 Mu'āwiya ibn abi Sufyān, 23, 31, 85 f.  
 Mu'awwidh ibn 'Afra', 75.  
 MUHAMMAD (The Prophet, Allāh's apostle, etc.), 2 f., 15, 19-25, 27-33, 35, 37-40, 69-71, 73-84, 86, 88-90, 92 f., 96, 98, 103-5, 108, 111, 113-118, 133.  
 Muḥammad ibn 'Alī, 39.  
 Muḥammad ibn al-Munkadir, 30, 35.  
 Mujāhid ibn Jabr, 1, 30 f., 36, 38.  
 Al-Muktafi, 14.  
 Muslim ibn al-Ḥajjāj, 19, 33, 75, 78, 80, 87, 94, 98, 111, 117, 152.  
 Mu'ta, 84.  
 Al-Mu'tadid, 14.

Al-Nābulusī ('Abd al-Ğhani), 3 f., 24 f., 30, 37.  
 Nāfi', 29.  
 Al-Nasā'i, 29, 31, 80, 91, 117 f.  
 Al-Nawāwi, 12, 19, 31, 35 f., 115 f.  
 Al-Nifārī (Muhammad ibn 'Abd al-Jabbār), 89.  
 Al-Nisābū'i (Muhammad ibn 'Abdallāh), 87.  
 Al-Nuwairī, 1 f.

Persia, 36.

Qais ibn Sa'id (? Sa'd), 31.  
 Al-Qāsim ibn Muhammad, 25.  
 Qazwīn, 63.  
 Quraish (Arab tribe), 85.  
 Al-Qushairī (Abū'l-Qāsim), 1-3, 5-8, 25, 69, 71 f., 89, 94 f., 97, 100, 103.

Rāfi' ibn Ḥafṣ al-Madānī, 27.  
 Al-Rāsī, 39.  
 Al-Rubāiyī' bint Mu'awwidh ibn 'Afrā', 75.

Sahl ibn Sa'd, 19.  
 Sāliḥ ibn Khālid, 22.  
 Sāliḥ ibn al-Khalil, 35.  
 Salūl, 80.  
 Al-Sha'bī, 25.  
 Al-Şhāfi'i, 2, 77, 95.  
 Shaiba ibn Rabi'a, 79.  
 Shaikh 'Uthmān, 13.  
 Al-Shiblī, 97.  
 Shuraiḥ, 32, 36 f.  
 Sufyān al-Thaurī, 38.  
 Suhār ibn al-Abbās al-'Abdī, 23.  
 Suwaid ibn Ghafala, 31.  
 Syria, 39.

Al-Tabārī, 19, 32.  
 Tabūk, 39.

Ṭai' (Arab tribe), 33.  
 Tamīn (Arab tribe), 85.  
 Ṭāwus ('Abd al-Rāḥmān ibn Kaisān), 36, 40.  
 Al-Ṭayālisi, 28, 78, 88 f.  
 Al-Tirmidhī, 19 f., 29, 42 f., 89, 93 f., 117, 150, 152.  
 Tubba' (title), 39.  
 Tūs, 63.  
 Uhud, 29.  
 'Umar ibn 'Abd al-'Azīz, 26.  
 'Umar ibn al-Khaṭṭāb, 28 f., 37, 80.  
 Usaid ibn al-Ḥuḍair, 98.  
 'Utba ibn Ghazwān, 79.  
 'Uthmān ibn 'Affān, 12, 40.

Al-Wadā', 83.  
 Al-Walīd ibn Yazīd, 32.  
 Wāthīla ibn al-Asqā', 39.  
 Yahyā ibn abi Kuthayyir, 33.  
 Al-Yāman, 24, 36.  
 Yāqūt al-Rūmī, 15.  
 Yazid ibn 'Umar ibn Hubairā, 115.  
 Yazid ibn al-Walīd, 27, 32.  
 Yūsuf ibn al-Ḥusain al-Rāzī, 10.  
 Yūsuf ibn Ya'qūb, 15.  
 Zāid ibn 'Alī, 27.  
 Zāid ibn Ḥāritha, 84.  
 Al-Zubair ibn Bakkār, 15.  
 Zuhair ibn abi Sulmā, 92.  
 Al-Zuhri, 39.



